

# 2 Timothy

Table of Contents:

[Chapter 1](#)

[2 Timothy 1:1-7 \(Topical Message\)](#)

[2 Timothy 1:1-6](#)

[2 Timothy 1:7-18](#)

[Chapter 2](#)

[2 Timothy 2:1-7](#)

[2 Timothy 2:8-13](#)

[2 Timothy 2:14-26](#)

[Chapter 3](#)

[2 Timothy 3:1-17](#)

[Chapter 4](#)

[2 Timothy 4:1-8](#)

[2 Timothy 4:9-13](#)

[2 Timothy 4:14-22](#)

**Topical Messages:**

[2 Timothy 3:16 – The Uniqueness of the Bible](#)

[2 Timothy 4:22 – A Christmas Devotional](#)

[2 Timothy 4:22c – Amen \(We Make It Our Own\)](#)

## Chapter 1

Passage: 2 Timothy 1:1-7

Title: Preaching from the Position of Pain

**2 Timothy 1:1-7 (NKJV)** <sup>1</sup> Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, according to the promise of life which is in Christ Jesus, <sup>2</sup> To Timothy, a beloved son: Grace, mercy, *and* peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord. <sup>3</sup> I thank God, whom I serve with a pure conscience, as *my* forefathers *did*, as without ceasing I remember you in my prayers night and day, <sup>4</sup> greatly desiring to see you, being mindful of your tears, that I may be filled with joy, <sup>5</sup> when I call to remembrance the genuine faith that is in you, which dwelt first in your grandmother Lois and your mother Eunice, and I am persuaded is in you also. <sup>6</sup> Therefore I remind you to stir up the gift of God which is in you through the laying on of my hands. <sup>7</sup> For God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power and of love and of a sound mind.

A warm and wonderful introduction to this letter (which we call an epistle). But 4:6, Paul says his departure is at hand, death is imminent. What we know historically is Paul is in a brutal Roman prison, and he would be executed. This is Paul's last letter he will write (most scholars agree).

**2 Timothy 4:6 (NKJV)** <sup>6</sup> For I am already being poured out as a drink offering, and the time of my departure is at hand.

As warm and as wonderful this letter begins, as we will read and see, Paul is writing, speaking, preaching from a position of pain. Paul writes (preaches) from the position of pain, yet so interesting as we read the letter his pain is not directed at, or from, Rome or the Jews. This whole road he has traveled, years of his first imprisonment was because the Jews who falsely accused him, and had him arrested on trumped up charges. Paul would be released (obviously found not guilty), only to be rearrested some time shortly later by the Romans, and this time not under house arrest but in a brutal, horrendous conditions of a Roman prison (which I will discuss all these things in more detail in our next study).

But Paul is writing, speaking, preaching from a position of pain. Paul writes (preaches) from the position of pain, yet so interesting as we read the letter his pain is not directed at, or from, Rome or the Jews but those close to him who have personally hurt him. He says to Timothy in verse 4 that he is mindful of Timothy's tears and thus pain.

**2 Timothy 1:4 (NKJV)** <sup>4</sup> greatly desiring to see you, being mindful of your tears, that I may be filled with joy,

Has someone close to you hurt you?

Paul was preaching from a position of pain. It's hard for a person, especially us, to preach from the position of pain because it hurts. There's a pain in our heart. There's a pain in our emotion when we preach from a position of pain because the pain is real and the pain is fresh and the pain is alive and lingering in our very being, piercing the heart, piercing the emotion, piercing the soul. Yet Paul is going to preach from this position of pain and preach one of the most powerful messages ever heard. It's called the Second Letter to Timothy.

Have you ever poured yourself out, given everything? This is what Paul has done for the sake of others, and yet here's Paul in prison. And as we read all that he gave and all that he poured out ended in abandonment by some, by many. Yet as he writes to Timothy to finish well, he preaches from a position of pain as he's going to give Timothy these final charges to finish well to hear those same words, "Well done, good and faithful servant," that Paul soon will hear as he's in his last days. Yet Paul in his pain will be remembering all the critiquing that was put against him, all the wrong and all the unfairly attacks against him. And as he writes, Timothy will see them coming alive as he preaches from a position of pain.

Has someone close to you hurt you?

Yet in his pain, he speaks these powerful words that we should all home in on. He says to Timothy, "God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power, love and a sound mind." So the words spoken to each and every one of us that's applicable to us today is there's still power in

pain, there's still love in pain, and there's still a sound mind in pain, and God uses them in the position of our pain.

*2 Timothy 1:7 (NKJV) <sup>7</sup> For God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power and of love and of a sound mind.*

## **5 Reasons Personal Hurts are in this Epistle**

5 Reasons Paul's farewell letter would use precious ink, precious space, speaking to Timothy about the wounds of the people who hurt him (Paul)

**First: To Contrast** - Well, the first reason is it contrasts who is faithful to Him as we'll see in Luke would stay with Him when everybody else would abandon. Can I ask you, are there any Luke's in the room today, who stayed by even when all flee and abandon others when they're in their greatest time of need? The Lord, through the inspired word of God here, lets it be known that Paul has a treasure and Paul's treasure is the name Luke. I pray you'll be a Luke in somebody's life and if you have a Luke, treasure them. Let them know it and then be a Luke to someone when everybody else is leaving them and abandoning them. Maybe it's not even anything to do with personal sin, failing. But if so, that's even more so why we need to come and stand beside them. But just those who are lonely, maybe feel they're all alone in a closed room, like a prison cell and all forgotten them. They'll treasure a Luke who comes and stands with them.

*2 Timothy 4:11 (NKJV) <sup>11</sup> Only Luke is with me. Get Mark and bring him with you, for he is useful to me for ministry.*

*2 Timothy 1:15 (NKJV) <sup>15</sup> This you know, that all those in Asia have turned away from me, among whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes.*

*2 Timothy 1:16–17 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> The Lord grant mercy to the household of Onesiphorus, for he often refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain; <sup>17</sup> but when he arrived in Rome, he sought me out very zealously and found me.*

*2 Timothy 4:9–10 (NKJV) <sup>9</sup> Be diligent to come to me quickly; <sup>10</sup> for Demas has forsaken me, having loved this present world, and has departed for Thessalonica—Crescens for Galatia, Titus for Dalmatia.*

*2 Timothy 4:14–15 (NKJV) <sup>14</sup> Alexander the coppersmith did me much harm. May the Lord repay him according to his works. <sup>15</sup> You also must beware of him, for he has greatly resisted our words.*

You are verse two, a beloved son by Paul, in verse five, your mother and grandmother and above all by God who holds you in His hands, in His heart. Oh, I pray you know how you are loved even if your family doesn't love you. But I'm praying that they do. But you are loved. I pray you find it here. I pray and plead we love each other and we are continually reminded we are loved by Him. As we take communion, we'll hold a cup that declares in Hebrews chapter 12, verse one and two, for the joy that was set before Him. That's why He endured all to have us. On the night that He was betrayed, preaching from a place and position of pain, yet He came to a place and position of power.

*2 Timothy 1:2 (NKJV) <sup>2</sup> To Timothy, a beloved son: Grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.*

*2 Timothy 1:5 (NKJV) <sup>5</sup> when I call to remembrance the genuine faith that is in you, which dwelt first in your grandmother Lois and your mother Eunice, and I am persuaded is in you also.*

*Hebrews 12:1–2 (NKJV) <sup>1</sup> Therefore we also, since we are surrounded by so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which so easily ensnares us, and let us run with endurance the race that is set before us, <sup>2</sup> looking unto Jesus, the author and finisher of our faith, who for the joy that was set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God.*

*1 Corinthians 11:23–26 (NKJV) <sup>23</sup> For I received from the Lord that which I also delivered to you: that the Lord Jesus on the same night in which He was betrayed took bread; <sup>24</sup> and when He had given thanks, He broke it and said, "Take, eat; this is My body which is broken for you; do this in remembrance of Me." <sup>25</sup> In the same manner He also took the cup after supper, saying, "This cup is the new covenant in My blood. This do, as often as you drink it, in remembrance of Me." <sup>26</sup> For as often as you eat this bread and drink this cup, you proclaim the Lord's death till He comes.*

Verse three, speaks of the forefathers. I think there's a place to honor our forefathers, not just the forefathers as we adore them as Charles Spurgeon and Pastor Chuck Smith and Pastor Joe Focht and Pastor Dave Guzik. But I'm talking to forefathers, such as godly mothers and fathers, godly and influential brothers and sisters who stand beside each and every one of us. There's a place that they deserve honor, we should give them honor. I think it's a great place to even speak honor on to them and of them to others and to them directly.

*2 Timothy 1:3 (NKJV)* <sup>3</sup> I thank God, whom I serve with a pure conscience, as my forefathers did, as without ceasing I remember you in my prayers night and day,

**Secondly: To Acknowledge**, it acknowledges that people close to us, hurt us and to be honest, we can be the ones who do the hurting and let us be reminded of that and Paul is saying, "Don't be surprised and don't be disillusioned, Timothy. What happened to me will happen to you because, as Jesus would say, the servant is not greater than the master and as it happened to Jesus, He speaks." But we have the continual power behind it. Disillusionment will call us to quit. Disillusionment may call us to depart and Paul's reminding and putting forth to Timothy expect it. Acknowledge people close to you will hurt you.

"But oh the wounds of a friend," as Jesus would be wounded by Judas who He called a friend. He considered Judas a friend in the wounds of a friend. And you know the question, why does Paul's farewell letter address these things? The personal wounds that will read of friends like Alexander, the coppersmith, Demas, who forsakes him and the others that we'll see here. Why would he address it, give ink and space to these and those who hurt him?

*Proverbs 27:6 (NKJV)* <sup>6</sup> Faithful are the wounds of a friend, But the kisses of an enemy are deceitful.

*Matthew 26:48–50 (NKJV)* <sup>48</sup> Now His betrayer had given them a sign, saying, "Whomever I kiss, He is the One; seize Him." <sup>49</sup> Immediately he went up to Jesus and said, "Greetings, Rabbi!" and kissed Him. <sup>50</sup> But Jesus said to him, "Friend, why have you come?" Then they came and laid hands on Jesus and took Him.

Hurting is a dangerous, emotional place to be. It's a place many people quit. It's a place that many people, because of disillusionment, believe the part. But Paul doesn't and he is reinforcing to Timothy so he doesn't either and so we see a place of power in our passage today and the weeks to come as we study this book preaching from the position of pain and the power that comes in the midst of the pain.

Paul will say to Timothy that God has not given a spirit of fear, but of power, love and a sound mind. Paul would say those words to Timothy because he would know that Timothy is fearful about something. And so he calls to remind not to be fearful, to remember the power of God and the promises of God. I am reminded of Abraham after he stormed the gates with 300 men there against the five kings, valiant, daring night raid, victorious. But then after when the emotions settle, God would come and speak to him and say, "Fear, not Abraham." The reason he would say that is because Abraham would be fearful. "Are the kings going to regroup and rally, get reinforcements and now come and track me down and strike me down?" So God speaks to him, "Fear not." So God speaks to Timothy because God had spoken to Paul, because God had spoken to Abraham and because God speaks to us. "Fear not. I'm not giving you the spirit of fear, but of power, love and sound mind. Fear not, for I am God."

*2 Timothy 1:7 (NKJV)* <sup>7</sup> For God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power and of love and of a sound mind.

*Genesis 15:1 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> After these things the word of the LORD came to Abram in a vision, saying, "Do not be afraid, Abram. I am your shield, your exceedingly great reward."

**Thirdly: To See**, God sees those who hurt you. Whether literal tears or emotional tears, God sees. Jehovah-Rohi as he would speak that to Hagar. I see you. I see your pain. I see your tears and I catch them in the bottle. You don't cry alone and no tear ever drops to the floor alone or absorbs into the pillow alone. Every tear that you've ever shed in your life, think about this, transports itself into Heaven, into a bottle that God holds, Psalm 56, verse 8. Every tear we think they get absorbed in our natural water system, evaporation, I don't stretch the truth when I say they're teleported to a place in Heaven in a bottle that God holds and sees our tears in his bottle of remembrance. As Paul would say to Timothy, "I'm reminded of your tears."

*Genesis 16:13–14 (NKJV)* <sup>13</sup> Then she called the name of the LORD who spoke to her, You-Are-the-God-Who-Sees; for she said, "Have I also here seen Him who sees me?" <sup>14</sup> Therefore the well was called Beer Lahai Roi; observe, it is between Kadesh and Bered.

*Psalms 56:8 (NKJV)* <sup>8</sup> You number my wanderings; Put my tears into Your bottle; Are they not in Your book?

Fear is the literal word "timidity". It's a wordplay there in verse five and six, as it is Paul reminding is who you are, genuine faith. You're gifted, Timothy. You are Timothy, a beloved one. You're not timid. You're Timothy, a beloved one, a beloved of God.

**Fourthly: To Promise**, back to verse one, there is a promise of life. The word there is Zoe life. We speak it often here. It's the abundant life. It's the God life. It's a life that is beyond the life of this world. It's the life that Jesus lived and the disciples lived. As the devil would come to steal, kill and destroy and so we see the heart of pain as Paul preaches through pain from a position of pain and yet we see the counter of the promise and the power of the abundant life of those who shed tears, of those whose hearts are ached and harmed. God sees.

*2 Timothy 1:1 (NKJV) <sup>1</sup> Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, according to the promise of life which is in Christ Jesus,*

*John 10:10 (NKJV) <sup>10</sup> The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly.*

In 2 Corinthians, we see Paul list the things that were intended to break him. But isn't it amazing the things that were made and thought to break him, made him unbreakable and once again, there's a promise through all the pains, things meant to break us, actually make us unbreakable? *2 Corinthians 11:22-29 (NKJV) <sup>22</sup> Are they Hebrews? So am I. Are they Israelites? So am I. Are they the seed of Abraham? So am I. <sup>23</sup> Are they ministers of Christ?—I speak as a fool—I am more: in labors more abundant, in stripes above measure, in prisons more frequently, in deaths often. <sup>24</sup> From the Jews five times I received forty stripes minus one. <sup>25</sup> Three times I was beaten with rods; once I was stoned; three times I was shipwrecked; a night and a day I have been in the deep; <sup>26</sup> in journeys often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils of my own countrymen, in perils of the Gentiles, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren; <sup>27</sup> in weariness and toil, in sleeplessness often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakedness—<sup>28</sup> besides the other things, what comes upon me daily: my deep concern for all the churches. <sup>29</sup> Who is weak, and I am not weak? Who is made to stumble, and I do not burn with indignation?*

**Fifthly: To Show**— To Show you, that nothing, and no one can stop the work of God that He has purposed and destined you for.

*2 Timothy 4:16-18 (NKJV) <sup>6</sup> At my first defense no one stood with me, but all forsook me. May it not be charged against them. <sup>17</sup> But the Lord stood with me and strengthened me, so that the message might be preached fully through me, and that all the Gentiles might hear. Also I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion. <sup>18</sup> And the Lord will deliver me from every evil work and preserve me for His heavenly kingdom. To Him be glory forever and ever. Amen!*

Verse six, Timothy has a gift stirred in him, the laying on of hands and his reward was Act 16, that he has to be circumcised to go on the mission field with Paul. I find that ever so amazing in that Timothy willingly and willfully did that for the sake of the gospel. Timothy is young and faithful and what a wonderful example, regardless of age. Young physically, young at heart, both of them have a calling and a beauty that follows in faithfulness.

*2 Timothy 1:6 (NKJV) <sup>6</sup> Therefore I remind you to stir up the gift of God which is in you through the laying on of my hands.*

The call is the finish. This is what Paul is in his last days and he's given a writing here to Timothy to finish and to finish well. To finish well is to finish faithfully and when the Lord speaks, "Well done, good and faithful servant," the keyword there is faithful. May we be faithful to the end.

*2 Timothy 2:1-7 (NKJV) <sup>1</sup> You therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. <sup>2</sup> And the things that you have heard from me among many witnesses, commit these to faithful men who will be able to teach others also. <sup>3</sup> You therefore must endure hardship as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. <sup>4</sup> No one engaged in warfare entangles himself with the affairs of this life, that he may please him who enlisted him as a soldier. <sup>5</sup> And also if anyone competes in athletics, he is not crowned unless he competes according to the rules. <sup>6</sup> The hardworking farmer must be first to partake of the crops. <sup>7</sup> Consider what I say, and may the Lord give you understanding in all things.*

In verse 4, Paul says forefathers and he's proud of the forefathers and the lineages. And I've come to appreciate and find the power in the lineages of the forefathers. Because you know what? There's a built-in promise. There's a built-in power when you study them and look at them and ponder them, the boring lineages, so to say. But you know what? It proves nothing can stop the Lord Almighty. Israel cannot be wiped out. The lineages prove that God preserved them. And here, 2,000 years later, they still stand, the only nation to exist without a homeland for 2,000 years, and here they are. As Zechariah prophesied in chapter 12, they would come back into the land, a nation born in the day. Ezekiel 36 and 37 said the regathering of Israel, written 2,500 years ago. And yet here we are seeing the regathering of Israel from the four corners of the earth.

The boring lineages proves that nothing can stop the Lord Almighty. The gospel cannot be stopped.

The lineages to the Messiah, as many times as they were tried to be wiped out, whether it was Haman or Herod, the gospel could not be stopped, the lineage of it. And Jesus Christ was born exactly as ordained by the scripture's prophecy, and lineage. And when the third H, Hitler, tried to wipe out Israel, they still stand. Even with such a mad man, three mad men, yet none of them could stop the Lord Almighty.

And as I read that in Genesis 49:25, "By God of your father, by the Almighty." And that word there Almighty El Shaddai. Psalm 89:18, "For our shield belongs to the Lord, the Holy one of Israel" The Holy one of Israel speaks two words, Holy and Israel. Israel means God prevails. As Jacob wrestled with God, God prevailed. Israel is his name, as it was changed. Holy means set apart. And so we have a lineage of the set apart God who prevails. And so the promise that we see through the forefathers for us, no one, nothing can stop the Lord Almighty. Nothing can stop Philippians 1:6, that he who began and a good work will be faithful to complete it until that day. As we read the other passages of the promise of his appearing, nothing can stop the Lord Almighty coming back and coming for us.

*Genesis 49:25 (NKJV)* <sup>25</sup> *By the God of your father who will help you, And by the Almighty who will bless you With blessings of heaven above, Blessings of the deep that lies beneath, Blessings of the breasts and of the womb.*

*Psalms 89:18 (NKJV)* <sup>18</sup> *For our shield belongs to the LORD, And our king to the Holy One of Israel.*

*Philippians 1:6 (NKJV)* <sup>6</sup> *being confident of this very thing, that He who has begun a good work in you will complete it until the day of Jesus Christ;*

*1 Thessalonians 2:19 (NKJV)* <sup>19</sup> *For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoicing? Is it not even you in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at His coming?*

## **5 Reasons God Reveals Personal Hurts in the Epistle of Second Timothy**

- First: To Contrast (Who is Faithful)
- Secondly: To Acknowledge (Close People do Hurt Us)
- Thirdly: To See (God Sees Who Hurts You)
- Fourthly: To Promise (Still There is a Promise of Abundant Life)
- Fifthly: To Show (Nothing Can Stop the Lord in Your Life)

## **Conclusion**

So Paul, his pain isn't against Rome who's imprisoning him. It isn't against the Jews who falsely accused him that started this whole mess in his life. His pain is about the false prophets coming to deceive the church. His pain is in the personal relationships that have hurt him and wounded him. It's not what we would have thought. We would've thought his pain would've been against Rome, the tyrant governing authority. You would've thought it'd been bitter at the Judaizing Jewish countrymen, but it's not, and hence speaks a deep story for each and every one of us of what this passage, what this four-chapter book means to us as Paul preaches through pain. And yet his pain comes in power and speaks a story to us because all of us suffer some type of pain through this world. And God has a story and a word for us as we start this new study in this glorious book of II Timothy.

## **Communion**

*1 Corinthians 11:23–26 (NKJV)* <sup>23</sup> *For I received from the Lord that which I also delivered to you: that the Lord Jesus on the same night in which He was betrayed took bread; <sup>24</sup> and when He had given thanks, He broke it and said, "Take, eat; this is My body which is broken for you; do this in remembrance of Me." <sup>25</sup> In the same manner He also took the cup after supper, saying, "This cup is the new covenant in My blood. This do, as often as you drink it, in remembrance of Me." <sup>26</sup> For as often as you eat this bread and drink this cup, you proclaim the Lord's death till He comes.*

## **Prayer**

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV)* <sup>12</sup> *For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

### **In Every Study**

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do His mighty work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

Passage: 2 Timothy 1:1-6

Title: Paul's Impenetrable Prison

Summary: Paul is writing his last letter before his death, from a brutal Roman prison. Everyone at some point feels imprisoned, bound by something beyond their control, yet as we study today Paul is captive with love and joy. How could that be? We will see Paul built an impenetrable prison cell, where the enemy of his heart and mind could not reach, but only Jesus. Join us as we see how we can do the same when faced with painful circumstances outside of our control.

### **Outline 2 Timothy 1:1-6**

- God has a Will for Every Person Here Today (1:1)
- There is Power in Being Childlike (1:2)
- God Always a Specific Word for You and You Alone (1:2)
- God's Greeting of Peace (Shalom) and it's Fullness in It (1:2)
- Paul Turned His Prison into a Temple (1:3)
- Paul's Prison Was Impenetrable (1:3)
- Catching Other Peoples Tears – Being Like God (1:4)
- The Gift of Passing on the Faith (1:5-6)

### **Prayer**

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

### **In Every Study**

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

**(2 Timothy 1:1 NKJV) Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, according to the promise of life which is in Christ Jesus,**

### **God has a Will for Every Person Here Today (1:1)**

Verse one. Paul, an apostle. Apostle means sent one and Paul, an apostle, was sent by the will of God.

Paul had plenty of reasons that could question and challenge “are you sure you an apostle by the will of God” because I would have expected a life way more “smoother” than the life you lived. Hey understand this beloved, the words are true, all who desire to live godly in Christ Jesus will suffer persecution

*2 Timothy 3:10–13 (NKJV) <sup>10</sup> But you have carefully followed my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, longsuffering, love, perseverance, <sup>11</sup> persecutions, afflictions, which happened to me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra—what persecutions I endured. And out of them all the Lord delivered me. <sup>12</sup> Yes, and all who desire to live godly in Christ Jesus will suffer persecution. <sup>13</sup> But evil men and impostors will grow worse and worse, deceiving and being deceived.*

The word for “life” here is the word “zoe” which we have studied and knows means “abundant life”:

*John 10:10 (NKJV) <sup>10</sup> The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly.*

Too many people miss the abundant life that's promised to them because they do not first see and believe by faith that God has a will, a determination for their life (I've come that they may have life and that more abundant, and that I have a future and hope for you). In Paul's case, it was to be an apostle, a sent one, sent out from him who called him. God has a specific will for each and every one of us and it doesn't necessarily mean it's singular and one thing only. Let me explain what I mean by that.

*Jeremiah 29:11 (NKJV)* <sup>11</sup> For I know the thoughts that I think toward you, says the LORD, thoughts of peace and not of evil, to give you a future and a hope.

There are elements of the will of God. We even see a progression in the will of God but each of the elements are part of the will of God for our life. Too often we think the will of God is that thing that we do or that thing that we are. But it's way more than that as we look at the elements and the progression of the will of God.

We see that in the womb, the gospel, the transformation, the discipleship, the mentorship, and then in Paul's case, the doing, the sent-out one.

- The womb. Says we were formed in our mother's womb.
- And then the second we see in these elements of the progression of the will of God becomes the gospel, that God opens our eyes to the gospel to see a need for the Savior and that our sin separates us from the holy one. But God's great love that he traded places with us, took our sin so that we might take sons and daughtership with him.
- Thirdly, we see the transformation. I begin a life of living transformation from the old man to the new man. Romans Chapter 7 Paul will speak of that transformation, that process that was happening in his life, all part of the will of God in his life.
- Fourth we see along that way; discipleship is the will of God for Paul's life as he studied 14 years in Arabia.
- Then after that, we see a mentorship as he came up to Jerusalem and met with the apostles. Then we see Paul's calling here as an apostle, as a sent-out one, that Paul was sent out. Maybe you can see these elements of the progression of the will of God in each and every one of our lives.

*Psalms 139:13 (NKJV)* <sup>13</sup> For You formed my inward parts; You covered me in my mother's womb.

*Psalms 139:14 (NKJV)* <sup>14</sup> I will praise You, for I am fearfully and wonderfully made; Marvelous are Your works, And that my soul knows very well.

*Romans 5:8 (NKJV)* <sup>8</sup> But God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that while we were still sinners, Christ died for us.

*Romans 7:23–25 (NKJV)* <sup>23</sup> But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. <sup>24</sup> O wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this body of death? <sup>25</sup> I thank God—through Jesus Christ our Lord! So then, with the mind I myself serve the law of God, but with the flesh the law of sin.

*Galatians 1:15–17 (NKJV)* <sup>15</sup> But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mother's womb and called me through His grace, <sup>16</sup> to reveal His Son in me, that I might preach Him among the Gentiles, I did not immediately confer with flesh and blood, <sup>17</sup> nor did I go up to Jerusalem to those who were apostles before me; but I went to Arabia, and returned again to Damascus.

*Galatians 1:18–19 (NKJV)* <sup>18</sup> Then after three years I went up to Jerusalem to see Peter, and remained with him fifteen days. <sup>19</sup> But I saw none of the other apostles except James, the Lord's brother.

Paul was sent out, Paul was sent out to be an apostle. Maybe you're called to be sent out into the boardroom of Corporate America, maybe called to be sent out into the healthcare to show the compassion and the heart of God. Maybe you're called out to be sent out to be a guard or a police officer. Maybe you've been called out to be a father or mother. Maybe you've been called out on your campus and sent out. All of us have an apostleship in a sense that God sends us out somewhere because he sends us not just out, but sends us to a people who are in need of the living God, to hear the promise of life and the offer of the abundant life to them. So first is to believe, then it's to receive the Word of God inspired by his Spirit and then to go. There's a process in the will of God for each and every one of us.

- God has designed you in the mother's womb and his ways are perfect and you are perfect in the way that he has designed you. We can all buy the lie of the world, wish we

were more of this and less of that, change this, change that. God has made you perfect because God is the master architect. You are fearfully and wonderfully made by God himself.

- And then secondly, when you're sent out, you have to remember this, the very gospel that changed your life has the power to change others' lives. If it could change you, you know it can change others. If it grabbed hold of you and rescued you from darkness and brought you into the marvelous light, you know the power of it. You know that there's people just like you out there waiting to hear it, waiting to receive it and waiting to be delivered and waiting to be embraced and loved by God himself.
- Thirdly, as we speak of this transformation, the vessel has to hold water and I mean the water of the living water of the Holy Spirit and therefore God has to do a transforming work of taking and conforming from the old man into the new man and so there's part of the process of the elements of the will of God that he's doing in our lives.
- Fourth, there's also along that way this discipleship, the Word of God working in us first as good farmers and then secondly, outward to those that we're sent to but God's word is in the midst of God's will. The two are inseparable and so he has to pour the word in before he pours us out. The vessel has to hold water as it's transformed and then it has to be filled by the living God himself.
- Then fifthly, mentors for us get us from A to B faster than we can do it alone. And so the power being sent out to a brother or sister to mentor them and to grow them, to invest in our failures, to hopefully deliver them from a future failure that we've already stepped on.

Verse one. The promise of life only comes from the only way of life. John 14:6, as Jesus would say, I am the way the truth and the life and no man comes to the father except by me. The only way of life is through a union with Jesus Christ.

*John 14:6 (NKJV) <sup>6</sup> Jesus said to him, "I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me.*

**(2 Timothy 1:2 NKJV) To Timothy, a beloved son: Grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.**

### There is Power in Being Childlike (1:2)

Verse two. Beloved son. The word son literally means child. Paul is calling this man Timothy, who my guess is probably in his mid-thirties, a son as in a young child of a son. And there's a special bond that we see between Paul and Timothy. Paul will tell Timothy, don't despise your youth. And so we know Paul's not talking down to Timothy, but he's talking a special bond to Timothy, a special heart connection with Timothy as a father and a son.

And you know, Church, Christian, there's a power in childlikeness. Paul is speaking a power along with a special bond to Timothy. We know the scripture, come as a child for such is the kingdom of God. I find it ever so interesting, and I find it ever so powerful, that God calls the children of Israel, the children of Israel. When they go to war, often we read the children of Israel went to war. They're called children even though they were adults and even though they were warriors and I find a great peace and power that that is my position, a child of God. Even in the midst of war and battle and long roads of resistance, the attacks of the devil and the world, though I've fought many battles and feel I still have a lot left in the tank to fight many more, I take comfort in all my battles that my ultimate title and position is not passed or warrior, extreme fighter, but my ultimate position is child of God because then I know dad doesn't let me fight any of these alone.

*Mark 10:14–16 (NKJV) <sup>14</sup> But when Jesus saw it, He was greatly displeased and said to them, "Let the little children come to Me, and do not forbid them; for of such is the kingdom of God. <sup>15</sup> Assuredly, I say to you, whoever does not receive the kingdom of God as a little child will by no means enter it." <sup>16</sup> And He took them up in His arms, laid His hands on them, and blessed them.*

*1 Kings 6:13 (NKJV) <sup>13</sup> And I will dwell among the children of Israel, and will not forsake My people Israel."*

Not one battle does he say, go get them son. Every battle is a joint effort. And then every battle we get to as sons and daughters to simply look at the battle that's before us. What battle might be before you, Christian? Depression, financial criticality, hopelessness, ready to quit, employment,

maybe just something big that you don't even know how to tackle and face? What a beautiful place as children of God that we get to say, dad, you got this. Right? You got this dad, for I can't do this one alone. Oh, what a beautiful place and position of power.

As a child with a loving father, remember not one tear drops apart from him as we read in Psalm 56. I don't have to be the mighty man all the time because if you live in this world long enough, there is much to be heartbroken over and he ministers in my weakness and brokenness. I'm sure doctors would say not so, but I believe the reservoir for our tears is somewhere in our hearts that x-rays can't see but when my heart breaks, sometimes a trickle, sometimes a flood, but he catches them all.

*Psalm 56:8 (NKJV)*<sup>8</sup> *You number my wanderings; Put my tears into Your bottle; Are they not in Your book?*

First Thessalonians 2:7. Paul reflects that heart of God as he likens to a nursing mother under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit. And we read in Isaiah 49:15, can a nursing mother forget her child?

*1 Thessalonians 2:7 (NKJV)*<sup>7</sup> *But we were gentle among you, just as a nursing mother cherishes her own children.*

*Isaiah 49:15 (NKJV)*<sup>15</sup> *“Can a woman forget her nursing child, And not have compassion on the son of her womb? Surely they may forget, Yet I will not forget you.*

Paul's unleashing power in Timothy's life by reminding him.... Child of God

Verse two. Timothy, it means he who honors God. Last week we talked about Luke being with Paul as everyone else forsook him and last week I said, are there any Luke's in the room? Treasure them in your life. Be one to another. And today's question would be any Timothy's here? Anyone whose identification is he who honors God. Look, I know at any time on any Sunday with the number of people here, somebody is face-to-face with a situation that you are at a decision point. Am I going to honor God in this situation or am I going to compromise? Maybe in trying to convince yourself you are an exception or you have some justification in your cause, I pray you choose to be a Timothy, he who honors God regardless of the price or the pain that has to be parted with.

Why do it? Why live a life that honors God? Simply because he's worth it. Why do it? Because God's honor is at stake and every decision and in every action God's honor in your life is at stake, staked in the ground as a flag for the whole world to look and see. Will they honor God? Did they honor God? Preach your greatest sermon through a life that honors God not through words. As the Amish say, if all else fails, use words. Don't wait until heaven to join the choir we see in Revelation, sing it and live it today

*Revelation 4:11 (NKJV)*<sup>11</sup> *“You are worthy, O Lord, To receive glory and honor and power; For You created all things, And by Your will they exist and were created.”*

### God Always a Specific Word for You and You Alone (1:2)

Verse two. Mercy. It's only added in First and Second Timothy introduction as Paul writes a greeting to Timothy. All the other of the Pauline epistles he simply says grace and peace to you, the common greeting, but for Timothy he says grace, mercy and peace. Why for Timothy is that third word added, mercy? I believe because it was inspired. Of course we know it is because verse 16 of chapter 3 says this book, all these words of God is inspired. And it was a word to Timothy that Timothy needed to hear in that day for whatever reason in his life, this period of these letters to, over a period of probably four years, Timothy needed to hear that word mercy. You know, that word mercy was specific and unique to Timothy for whatever he was going through. It was a specific word to him. You know, Christian, God has a specific word he desires to speak to you, to me each day and in our lives wholly.

*Ephesians 1:1-2 (NKJV)*<sup>1</sup> *Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, To the saints who are in Ephesus, and faithful in Christ Jesus: <sup>2</sup> Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.*

*2 Timothy 3:16-17 (NKJV)*<sup>16</sup> *All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, <sup>17</sup> that the man of God may be complete, thoroughly equipped for every good work.*

I wonder if that's what Timothy's life verse was, grace, mercy and peace? I know my life verse that God spoke to me, Matthew 6:33, seek first the kingdom of God and his righteousness and all

these things will be added unto you, and I must constantly continually remember that. Do you have a life verse? God gives life verses. God gives specific verses. God gives specific words for the day to each and every one of us.

*Matthew 6:33 (NKJV)* <sup>33</sup> *But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you.*

Just as he spoke to Timothy, just as he'll speak to us, I have a specific word that I'm weaving and it's ever so subtle here to Timothy as we see mercy slipped in with the common greeting of grace and peace, but it was a special word just for him and God has a special word just for you. It's special and it's different for you and it's special and different for the person to the left of you. It's special and different to the person to the right of you. It's not common. It's not something that's just words that are put out there, but it's an inspired word that God wants to speak and give you in your time of need or what you need to hear, not even knowing that it's the need for the moment, but God speaks unique and specific words to each and every one of us just as he does Timothy here.

Oh, and I pray Christian, you'll just slow down and know every morning there's a special word for you. Can you imagine Timothy opening up this letter and whatever state he was in and he begins to read? It starts with grace, mercy and peace and the uniqueness of it and the specialty of it just for him to hear just what he needed to hear for that day in that moment. How many times he might've went back to hear it over and over again, to read it over and over and again, Paul said to me from the heart of God, grace, mercy, and peace. And I pray that we'll slow down to know that every morning God would open up a special word and speak to us uniquely inspired, for this word is what you need today as specific and uniquely and what you need to hear for that day.

Or maybe it's a word that continues on for weeks and months and maybe it becomes a life verse, but God does that in an ever so wonderful and beautiful way for each and every one of us. This word written to the masses and yet we can open it and read it as it was written to us individually. That we can read that it wasn't written to Timothy, that it was written to Ray. It wasn't written in 67 AD, it was written in 2021 and it wasn't delivered in Ephesus, it was delivered in Pasadena, Maryland and it was from the heart of God inspired to say, Ray, this is your word for today. To say to the Christian, this is your word for today so get it and grab it.

### **God's Greeting of Peace (Shalom) and it's Fullness in It (1:2)**

Verse 2 that word peace in the Hebrew, that word is Shalom. And if you walk through Israel each morning or passing by or to the gift shops, if you've been on the tours in Israel, you'll hear it over and over. Shalom. It's a beautiful word.

It's a word that would be coupled in power, as Jesus would be called the Prince of Peace, God would be called Jehovah Shalom, the God of Peace. And when that Prince of Peace and the God of Peace used it, when Jesus walked this earth and spoke the words in John 14:27, that word Shalom peace, when Jesus spoke it, *meant the total wellbeing and inner rest of spirit that comes from fellowship with God*. He didn't say it in a casual greeting, a passing by Shalom. But when God spoke it in John 14:27, "The peace that I leave you, the peace that I give you," he was pouring out all of God as he said that. When someone says, "Hello, how are you?" I have to process if they're actually are just saying, hey, greetings to you in the morning, or do they really care how I am? Sometimes I'm ready to go into a whole explanation of how I am. Sometimes I do, and at the end I can look in people and they just want to say, I just wanted to say hello. I wasn't asking for all of that.

*John 14:27 (NKJV)* <sup>27</sup> *Peace I leave with you, My peace I give to you; not as the world gives do I give to you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.*

But when God says Shalom, he was giving all of that of John 14:27. When God would say Shalom from himself, he was pouring out all of the inner peace of God. The total wellbeing, the inner rest of the spirit that comes from the fellowship with God. It was an invitation, it was a beautiful invitation into intimacy with him. It was more than a greeting. It was an invitation of intimacy.

As Paul would be inspired here in Verse 2, and as Jesus would be inspired in John 14:27, they're saying more than just a hello. It's the full orb of the heart pouring out. Pouring out of a true how are you? A deep I'm here for you. It's God's power out to you through these words: my grace, my mercy, my peace. I give it on to you. Psalm 81 Verse 10, "Open thy mouth wide, and I will fill it," He says, and He's speaking here as in Verse 2 to Timothy, and as Jesus speaks to us, Verse 27 of John 14, "Drink it in receive the banquet provided for you, prepared at the table of my heart for you to dive in, to dine in and to have." Shalom the beautiful invitation from God, way greater than just a greeting from God.

*Psalm 81:10 (NKJV) <sup>10</sup> I am the LORD your God, Who brought you out of the land of Egypt; Open your mouth wide, and I will fill it.*

*John 4:14 (NKJV) <sup>14</sup> but whoever drinks of the water that I shall give him will never thirst. But the water that I shall give him will become in him a fountain of water springing up into everlasting life."*

**(2 Timothy 1:3 NKJV) I thank God, whom I serve with a pure conscience, as my forefathers did, as without ceasing I remember you in my prayers night and day,**

### **Paul Turned His Prison into a Temple (1:3)**

Where is Paul, he is in a prison. Instead of complaining, he prayed, night and day nonetheless. Instead of complaining that if he wasn't in that prison he could have been doing so much more for the Lord, he prayed. He turned his prison into a temple.

Maybe you feel imprisoned, why did I marry him or her, I could have been in the ministry or mission field, instead I'm vacuuming, doing laundry, cooking for him. If that is the case, then use that time to pray. Use that time vacuuming, folding laundry to pray. Maybe if you were a missionary or in the ministry full-time, you wouldn't have that time cooking, cleaning, etc to pray. Do you have a boring, no brainer job, then pray.

You can pray for the unsaved, for family, fellow believers, for missionaries across the world, world leaders. Use the most powerful weapon we as Christians have, the power of prayer.

Paul used his prison praying for Timothy night and day.

Verse 3, Paul turned his prison into a prayer room. And in it, we see the passport of prayer. It's in His name is our passport on to the holy place. I need a passport to go here and there, to India and to Israel. They view it and they say, come on in, I see your passport. You can pass this port. And so too, when I use my passport in His name, I can boldly, confidently come to the throne of grace because my passport is in the name of Jesus. It's in the relationship in the fellowship, it's in the full rest and it's the full acceptance of Christ that I have.

*(John 16:23 NKJV) "And in that day you will ask Me nothing. Most assuredly, I say to you, whatever you ask the Father in My name He will give you.*

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

Take whatever situation God puts you in, and find a way to turn it into a temple, and pray.

### **Paul's Prison Was Impenetrable (1:3)**

Verse 3. Paul's impenetrable prison. Paul turns a prison into a temple. He turns it into a place that the devil can't touch him in. And the question will be, how can we do the same thing? And I could say, well, let's go back and review those five elements of the will of God and that would be true. I could say, let's go and look at what Paul is saying right here as he's remembering Timothy. He's giving thanks for Timothy we'll read in the next verses. We see his care of catching tears, and these are the things that will turn our prison into a prayer room. But I think there's something way more here. Something way deeper here that I want to share with you.

I love the power that I see when I look at Paul's in prison and the temple that he made out of it. As I see Paul and I think of

- Daniel in his prison, the lion's den,
- as I think of Paul and Silas in prison beforehand, singing praises,
- I see Peter in his prison time sleeping.

*Daniel 6:20 (NKJV)* <sup>20</sup> And when he came to the den, he cried out with a lamenting voice to Daniel. The king spoke, saying to Daniel, "Daniel, servant of the living God, has your God, whom you serve continually, been able to deliver you from the lions?"

*Acts 16:25 (NKJV)* <sup>25</sup> But at midnight Paul and Silas were praying and singing hymns to God, and the prisoners were listening to them.

*Acts 12:5-6 (NKJV)* <sup>5</sup> Peter was therefore kept in prison, but constant prayer was offered to God for him by the church. <sup>6</sup> And when Herod was about to bring him out, that night Peter was sleeping, bound with two chains between two soldiers; and the guards before the door were keeping the prison.

I think it's a mistake of the enemy when he finds men, women of God who know how to take a prison and turn it into a temple. We look at Daniel. We see Paul. We see Silas. We see Peter and we see peace, peace and peace. We see them lifting praise, praise and praise. We see them lifting prayer, prayer and prayer. They're literally saying, "Though the world may slay me, yet will I praise You," just as Job would say, even directing it at God. Though you slay me, yet will I praise you. What's their saying in their peace and in their praise and in their prayer is that I trust you that much.

*Job 13:15 (NKJV)* <sup>15</sup> Though He slay me, yet will I trust Him. Even so, I will defend my own ways before Him.

But I titled this message Paul's Impenetrable Prison, and it is a word of power and peace for each and every one of us. I don't mean Paul's prison was impenetrable by those trying to come and spring him out, the zealots to rescue and deliver. Though, that is true, a Roman prison was quite impenetrable.

What I mean, impenetrable was Paul was in prison. Yet, he was filled as we read and we see with joy and peace and I ask and we must question, how could that be and how could that be for me? What would the Lord show us today that this is available for us to be in a deep, dark depression of a prison and yet still be filled with joy and peace.

How can we find peace, praise and joy in our times of prison? Well, first, we see like Paul's physical prison, so too can our mental and emotion prisons be. [Someone or something puts us in prison](#). In Paul's case, it was a combination of the Jews and the Romans. In our case, someone who may be hurting us or someone who's coming against us and all we can do is think about what they've done and what they're doing or what they're going to do or maybe it's cancer or depression or hardship or a heartache and it puts us into a prison of depression, binds us up and what I see with Paul, his impenetrable prison, I see for me and I see for you that we can find this peace and praise as well.

It was who wasn't in Paul's prison? The Romans and the Jews were not as he will say in chapter four. Only Jesus stood by me in my first stand and you can be sure Jesus is standing by him right now in this prison and the point being made is everybody was out of Paul's prison but Jesus and that is why it was impenetrable by the enemy of doubt, depression and defeat and why he could turn it into a temple, a place of peace, of joy and praise.

*2 Timothy 4:16-18 (NKJV)* <sup>16</sup> At my first defense no one stood with me, but all forsook me. May it not be charged against them. <sup>17</sup> But the Lord stood with me and strengthened me, so that the message might be preached fully through me, and that all the Gentiles might hear. Also I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion. <sup>18</sup> And the Lord will deliver me from every evil work and preserve me for His heavenly kingdom. To Him be glory forever and ever. Amen!

Becoming self-confident means that you don't have to lean on another human for approval. Even in difficult situations, you can respond confidently from the core of who you are. In other words, you have good ego strength — solid self-awareness that you don't have to draw your value from other people.

As for us, that someone who's hurting us, coming against us, that something, cancer, unemployment, illness, we must say you can't come in here. You can't come and sit next to me and speak, speak, speak and that's all I'll hear is you and not Jesus. You don't control my every thought, my every response. You are on the outside and Jesus is on the inside.

You who are hurting me, this conversation is over. I will not dwell on you, but Him who stands with me and when we say out you go and in He comes, Jesus Christ and we do not let what's hurting us and what's crushing us to control us. But we sit and have this sweet place with Jesus, lifting praise, scripture and glory onto him and truly our prison is impenetrable.

Meshach, Shadrach, and Abednego. And I'm in the midst of the fiery furnace. And Jesus is in the midst, with me. And King Nebuchadnezzar says, "Come out." I'd be like, "I'm not coming out. Why would I come out? Jesus is in here. Why would I leave where Jesus is?"

*Daniel 3:24-25 (NKJV)* <sup>24</sup> Then King Nebuchadnezzar was astonished; and he rose in haste and spoke, saying to his counselors, "Did we not cast three men bound into the midst of the fire?" They answered and said to the king, "True, O king." <sup>25</sup> "Look!" he answered, "I see four men loose, walking in the midst of the fire; and they are not hurt, and the form of the fourth is like the Son of God."

And we can turn any prison into a temple, into the house of the Lord, by inviting Jesus in and excluding others from coming in, such as King Nebuchadnezzar, where we're in the sweet fellowship with him. And when the world or the people who imprisoned us say, "You're bad. You're a terrible person," we respond by he who's in with us, "You're precious. You're beloved." When they say you're worthless and you'll never amount to anything, we respond and say, "I was bought with a price, the blood of Jesus Christ. I am priceless, and I am precious in the sight of the Lord." When an illness says, "This is your life. You'll never be whole, again," we say, "He who made me whole keeps me whole, and I'm wholly his. I've been set apart by him. And regardless of what's in this body that's imprisoned right now, I know my Redeemer lives. And hence, and thus, the key to turning any prison into a temple or the house of the living God, a praise and worship center, is to stop the words from coming in. But anytime that they do, we simply counter them with the words of life and the words of the promise of the abundant life we have in him.

*Psalm 139:14 (NKJV)* <sup>14</sup> I will praise You, for I am fearfully and wonderfully made; Marvelous are Your works, And that my soul knows very well.

**(2 Timothy 1:4 NKJV) greatly desiring to see you, being mindful of your tears, that I may be filled with joy,**

#### **Catching Other Peoples Tears – Being Like God (1:4)**

Verse 4. What were Timothy's tears? Why were they tears? Were they tears that's as they separated from each other, Paul and Timothy? Was it tears at Timothy knew what's next for Paul's life? Were they tears for Timothy for his loneliness, or what he knew was in store for him next? I'm not sure. Read lots of commentaries and you'll get lots of comments on what people would say. For me, I'm not sure. The rest of the letter really doesn't let us know either. Paul knew. And God too, of course. See God says, "I see your tears, Timothy." Paul is saying, "I see your tears, Timothy." So for us, whose tears do you see? Whose tears do you catch? Paul was catching Timothy's tears. God catches our tears.

Sometimes I wonder, I know people that I love, I know they shed tears and I don't even know about it or see it. They can be right in front of me. Maybe not all of them come in the form of droplets. They're just tears that are deep in the heart. It's aching. Are transported up in the heaven before they even make it out of our tear ducts. And so I asked myself and I ask you: whose tears have we saw today? Whose tears have we captured today and ministered to today?

Now it's amazing; God made the tear ducts to flush the dirt and pollutants from our eyes. But also tear ducts to release heartache and heartbreak. How many times I say to myself, I want to be more like God. Well, here's one of them. You want to be like God? Be a tear catcher. Psalm 56 Verse 8, capture someone's tears, minister to them.

*Psalm 56:8 (NKJV)* <sup>8</sup> You number my wanderings; Put my tears into Your bottle; Are they not in Your book?

How to look for them? I think it can be as simple as "How are you doing?" with the giving of full orb of Shalom. I'm asking you by pouring out of my heart full rest and acceptance from me. I really want to know how you're doing. I really want you to tell me how you're doing.

**(2 Timothy 1:5 NKJV) when I call to remembrance the genuine faith that is in you, which dwelt first in your grandmother Lois and your mother Eunice, and I am persuaded is in you also.**

**(2 Timothy 1:6 NKJV) Therefore I remind you to stir up the gift of God which is in you through the laying on of my hands.**

### The Gift of Passing on the Faith (1:5-6)

Parents the greatest gift or inheritance you will ever give your children, is a godly heritage. Those of you with godly parents know what I mean. How I wish when I was growing up that someone in my family could have told me about this loving God. They could have read this book to me when I was discouraged or broken. That they could have taken to the place where I knew that I knew I would always be accepted and loved. I was so mixed up and confused, like so many kids today, if only they could have shared these words of life with me.

Those of you that are parents, you are so blessed to know these things now, so that you can pass them on to your children now, that they may enjoy and reap the blessings that come from this personal relationship with the Lord of all Creation.

Hence why we put such an emphasis on our children dedication, as we come together and ask the Lord to pass this faith on to the next generation, and for God's help in so doing. We see the Biblical illustration of dedicating a child as Hannah dedicates her son Samuel to the Lord.

*1 Samuel 1:24-28 (NKJV) <sup>24</sup> Now when she had weaned him, she took him up with her, with three bulls, one ephah of flour, and a skin of wine, and brought him to the house of the LORD in Shiloh. And the child was young. <sup>25</sup> Then they slaughtered a bull, and brought the child to Eli. <sup>26</sup> And she said, "O my lord! As your soul lives, my lord, I am the woman who stood by you here, praying to the LORD. <sup>27</sup> For this child I prayed, and the LORD has granted me my petition which I asked of Him. <sup>28</sup> Therefore I also have lent him to the LORD; as long as he lives he shall be lent to the LORD." So they worshiped the LORD there.*

Verse 6 - To stir - anazopureo, an-ad-zo-poor-eh'-o; to re-enkindle:--stir up.

Paul said Timothy rekindle that fire you once had. It appears Timothy was starting to wane somewhat and Paul is pointing back in the direction he needs to be going. Timothy God has given you all these gifts, don't let them sit on the shelf, don't let them go to waste, use them for the glory of God.

### Conclusion

Passage: 2 Timothy 1:1-6

Title: Paul's Impenetrable Prison:

Summary: Paul is writing his last letter before his death, from a brutal Roman prison. Everyone at some point feels imprisoned, bound by something beyond their control, yet as we study today Paul is captive with love and joy. How could that be? We will see Paul built and impenetrable prison cell, where the enemy of his heart and mind could not reach, but only Jesus. Join us as we see how we can do the same when faced with painful circumstances outside of our control.

### Outline 2 Timothy 1:1-6

- God has a Will for Every Person Here Today (1:1)
- There is Power in Being Childlike (1:2)
- God Always a Specific Word for You and You Alone (1:2)
- God's Greeting of Peace (Shalom) and it's Fullness in It (1:2)
- Paul Turned His Prison into a Temple (1:3)
- Paul's Prison Was Impenetrable (1:3)

- Catching Other Peoples Tears – Being Like God (1:4)
- The Gift of Passing on the Faith (1:5-6)

### Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

### **In Every Study**

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

Passage: 2 Timothy 1:7-18

Title: The Man/Woman of God Who Perseveres

Theme of the Book:

*2 Timothy 1:13–14 (NKJV)* <sup>13</sup> Hold fast the pattern of sound words which you have heard from me, in faith and love which are in Christ Jesus. <sup>14</sup> That good thing which was committed to you, keep by the Holy Spirit who dwells in us.

Summary: In our study today, the Lord gives us the calling and charge to “hold fast to the pattern”, which is the theme of this Book, so that we may not be moved and persevere regardless of what comes our way in life. God will give us 3 things in our study today that the man/woman of God does to persevere, so that we may not fear, but have power-love-and a sound mind. Join us for a great Word to stand on, especially for the days we are living in.

*2 Timothy 1:7–18 (NKJV)* <sup>7</sup> For God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power and of love and of a sound mind. <sup>8</sup> Therefore do not be ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me His prisoner, but share with me in the sufferings for the gospel according to the power of God, <sup>9</sup> who has saved us and called us with a holy calling, not according to our works, but according to His own purpose and grace which was given to us in Christ Jesus before time began, <sup>10</sup> but has now been revealed by the appearing of our Savior Jesus Christ, who has abolished death and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel, <sup>11</sup> to which I was appointed a preacher, an apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles. <sup>12</sup> For this reason I also suffer these things; nevertheless I am not ashamed, for I know whom I have believed and am persuaded that He is able to keep what I have committed to Him until that Day. <sup>13</sup> Hold fast the pattern of sound words which you have heard from me, in faith and love which are in Christ Jesus. <sup>14</sup> That good thing which was committed to you, keep by the Holy Spirit who dwells in us. <sup>15</sup> This you know, that all those in Asia have turned away from me, among whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes. <sup>16</sup> The Lord grant mercy to the household of Onesiphorus, for he often refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain; <sup>17</sup> but when he arrived in Rome, he sought me out very zealously and found me. <sup>18</sup> The Lord grant to him that he may find mercy from the Lord in that Day—and you know very well how many ways he ministered to me at Ephesus.

Outline: 2 Timothy 1:7-18:

1. The Man/Woman of God who Perseveres: Is Not to be Afraid - but have Power, Love and a Sound Mind (1:7)
2. The Man/Woman of God who Perseveres: Is Not to be Ashamed – but a Partaker of Affliction (1:8)
3. The Man/Woman of God who Perseveres: Is Not to be Moveable – but Unmovable (1: 9-18)

### Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV)* <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

### In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV)* <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Man and woman of God, hold fast; Paul knows his departure is near, he is giving the calling to finish well, finish in faith, finish in love, finish proudly for God's glory and honor.

*2 Timothy 1:13–14 (NKJV)* <sup>13</sup> Hold fast the pattern of sound words which you have heard from me, in faith and love which are in Christ Jesus. <sup>14</sup> That good thing which was committed to you, keep by the Holy Spirit who dwells in us.

## 1.) The Man/Woman of God who Perseveres: Is Not to be Afraid - but have Power, Love and a Sound Mind (1:7)

**(2 Timothy 1:7 NKJV) For God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power and of love and of a sound mind.**

### **Timothy Fearful / Is Paul Alive**

Persecution has started, Timothy is fearful, he too knows Paul's death is imminent. Is Paul even alive, will Nero dip him in wax, torture him slowly, parade him through the streets for public humiliation.....am I next?

### **The Knock on the Door**

Then the knock on the door comes, it is a friend, I have a letter for you, it is from your Father Paul, he lives. Imagine for Timothy, ohh just to hear from my father one more time. I hear about Nero killing all the Believers, but Paul still lives. Timothy would not have put the letter on the table and said I'll read after my show is over, I'll read it tomorrow, I'll read it after my kids' game is over, noooooo, it's from Paul. The world would have stopped for Timothy, ohh Paul, father, what do you have to say. Your words over the years have been strength to my soul, manna for the day.

### **He Reads this Line / Your Heavenly Father is With You**

Then he reads this line, *For God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power and of love and of a sound mind.* Timothy, fear not, although I am not with you, your Father in Heaven is. You are not alone, you are not forsaken, on the contrary, God has given you Himself, He has given you all you will ever need.

### **God Always Gives Himself**

In all circumstances, one thing **God will always give you, is Himself.** The power and love and sound mind are all Him, He is all those things.

Maybe you have fear today, it's a relationship, finances, health, God will say fear not, for I have given you, myself. We see Him through the Scriptures becoming all things to all our needs.

- When you are confused about your future go to your
  - "Jehovah-rah", your "**Caring Shepherd**" (Psalm 23)
- When you are anxious about your provisions, talk to your "*Jehovah-jireh*",
  - the "**Lord who Provides**" (Genesis 22)
- Are your challenges too great, then seek the help of
  - "Jehovah-shalom", the "**Lord is Peace.**" (Judges 6)
- Is your body sick, emotions weak, then go to your "*Jehovah-rophe*",
  - the "**Lord who Heals**" who will see you now. (Exodus 15)
- Do you feel like a soldier stranded behind enemy lines, then take refuge in
  - "*Jehovah-nissi*", the "**Lord is my Banner.**" (Exodus 17)
- As Moses said who shall I say sent me, the Lord replied
  - "*I Am*", which means "**the Becoming One**", God will become to you all you need, never leaving you lacking. He is the Great I Am. (Exodus 3)

*Exodus 3:13-14 (NKJV)* <sup>13</sup> Then Moses said to God, "Indeed, when I come to the children of Israel and say to them, 'The God of your fathers has sent me to you,' and they say to me, 'What is His name?' what shall I say to them?" <sup>14</sup> And God said to Moses, "I AM WHO I AM." And He said, "Thus you shall say to the children of Israel, 'I AM has sent me to you.' "

God does not give us the spirit of fear, but through His spirit He gives us power, love, and a sound mind.

### **Power**

The power is "dunamis", (doo'-nam-is); miraculous power (usually by impl. a miracle itself):--ability, abundance, meaning, might (-ily, -y, -y deed), (worker of) miracle (-s), power, strength, violence, mighty (wonderful) work.

## **Love**

The love is "agape", (ag-ah'-pay), it is love that is not capable for man, but only capable through the spirit of God

## **Sound Mind**

The sound mind is "sophronismos" (so-fron-is-mos) discipline, i.e. self-control:--sound mind. It is a mind that is at peace, not racing in confusion.

## **All it takes is a Breathe to Stir Up the Gifts**

It appears that this fear has caused Timothy to let his gifts wane and go dormant. Paul said to stir up the gifts Timothy. As we mentioned in the last study, stir-up means to rekindle the flame. You know all it takes to rekindle a fire is a little breathe. For us, that is the breath of heaven, the spirit of God.

*2 Timothy 1:5-6 (NKJV) <sup>5</sup> when I call to remembrance the genuine faith that is in you, which dwelt first in your grandmother Lois and your mother Eunice, and I am persuaded is in you also. <sup>6</sup> Therefore I remind you to stir up the gift of God which is in you through the laying on of my hands.*

## **Parents teach Your Kids this Verse**

Parents, Paul taught this verse to his son in the faith, Parents this is a memory verse you need to teach and instill in your children, make it one of the first you teach them.

## **2.) The Man/Woman of God who Perseveres: Is Not to be Ashamed – but a Partaker of Affliction (1:8)**

**(2 Timothy 1:8 NKJV) Therefore do not be ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me His prisoner, but share with me in the sufferings for the gospel according to the power of God,**

## **House Arrest vs Current Arrest**

This is Paul's last Epistle, as he writes he is imprisoned in a dark damp prison cell. In his prior imprisonment's he was basically under house arrest. There he was chained to a guard 24/7, but the conditions were as close to home as you could get, he had his clothing and blankets, and the basic necessities and basic comforts of home, and visitors could come and go as they pleased. But this imprisonment, he was in a cold damp crunched cell. I saw these prison cells while I was over in region. Not every cell was the same height, it would vary based on your height, the ceiling would always be one or two foot lower than the persons height so they could never fully stand up, they would always be crunched over. There were no toilets, but a common trench that ran through all the cells, thus everyone's waste would flow through everyone's cell. The walls were concrete, and would seep from the outside weather, the cell floor always damp, sometimes even soaked, (Paul will ask Timothy to bring me my coat (4:13), for comfort). Of course, with these conditions, rats and pests would be living among the prisoners.

## **Abandoned by Everyone**

On top of these conditions Paul was abandoned by virtually everyone, as we will read in chapter four. The reason he was abandoned, everyone was afraid to be associated with Paul because they feared they would suffer the same fate as him. For unlike Paul's confident hope of release during his first imprisonment (Phil 1:19,25,26;2:24; Philemon 1:22), this time he had no such hope, he knew execution was imminent.

## **My Time is at Hand**

*2 Timothy 4:6 (NKJV) <sup>6</sup> For I am already being poured out as a drink offering, and the time of my departure is at hand.*

## **1<sup>st</sup> Imprisonment vs 2<sup>nd</sup> Imprisonment**

The time of this writing is Paul's second imprisonment. Paul's first imprisonment was due to the local Jewish religious leaders, but this imprisonment was due to a much greater wave going

through the world. There was massive persecution against the Christians at this time. The charge against Paul for his second imprisonment was inciting an insurrection against Rome,

### **Rome in Flames / Christians to Blame**

Historical writings tell us, it was July 19, AD64 Rome was in flames. Though it was never known who started it, it was on such a scale that it was clear that it was not an accident. Many writings said it was Emperor Caesar Nero himself who set the blaze. They say as Rome burned he sat on his balcony twiddling his fingers, just watching it burn. He was bored with his world, nothing left to conquer, so in his mind if he could burn Rome down, then he could rebuild it. Rebuild it bigger and more fabulous, a tribute for the ages to come, a legacy for him to be remembered. As the citizens of Rome were outraged at the arson against their city, Nero accused the Christians of burning Rome, thus started the wave of persecution against the Christians.

### **Burn Own City / Timeline**

To burn your own city down is insane. But if we look at the timeline we can see the cause of his insanity.

Paul's first imprisonment was approximately 60-62AD, it was before Caesar Nero (the Emperor of Rome) began his all out persecution against the Christians. Paul's second imprisonment here is approximately 66-67AD (thus this writing is approx. 66-67AD). The timeline shows that it was shortly after his meeting with Paul that he started an all out assault against the Christians..

### **Paul never Missed and Opportunity**

Now we know Paul would not miss the opportunity to witness to Nero, just like he did with Felix.

*(Acts 24:25 NKJV) Now as he reasoned about righteousness, self-control, and the judgment to come, Felix was afraid and answered, "Go away for now; when I have a convenient time I will call for you."*

And then King Agrippa and Festus:

*Acts 26:27-29 (NKJV) <sup>27</sup> King Agrippa, do you believe the prophets? I know that you do believe. <sup>28</sup> Then Agrippa said to Paul, "You almost persuade me to become a Christian." <sup>29</sup> And Paul said, "I would to God that not only you, but also all who hear me today, might become both almost and altogether such as I am, except for these chains."*

### **Nero faced with his Sin / Burned Christians**

Paul would have told this man Caesar Nero that there was one greater than him, that he wasn't the greatest most powerful, but that Jesus Christ is, and that one day he would have to stand before his making. It was after this meeting that Nero launched an all-out assault on Christians

When faced with their sin, we will truly see what is in the heart of a person.

Writings say that Nero would at night coat Christians in wax or tar, tie them to a post and light them, then race his chariot between them naked screaming and yell at them as he passed. For enjoyment he would throw them in a pond full of piranhas and watch them get devoured.

As for Nero, his ultimate response to the gospel would be the ordering of Paul's beheading.

### **My Time is at Hand**

*2 Timothy 4:6 (NKJV) <sup>6</sup> For I am already being poured out as a drink offering, and the time of my departure is at hand.*

### **Satan wants you to Quit**

It is through hard times that Satan wants you to quit on your faith, to quit using your gifts. Satan will whisper in your ear, don't pray out loud, don't teach that Sunday School Class, don't share your faith, you are going to fail. Don't listen to him; it is a lie straight from the pit of hell.

### **Promised Hard Times**

We have been promised hard times:

*2 Timothy 3:12 (NKJV) <sup>12</sup> Yes, and all who desire to live godly in Christ Jesus will suffer persecution.*

### **Don't Despise Hard Times**

Don't be ashamed of the hard, don't despise the hard times, trust God is working in them and through them, therefore you yourself must persevere through them. You as this verse says, *are to share in them.*

*Ray do you think you made a mistake by quitting your job and going to Bible College? The question I heard several times at church, from well-meaning Christians, after I returned from Bible College and was unemployed for 9 months. Yes I can imagine how angry God must be at me for wanting to know Him more, become more like Him, and to serve Him and make Him known to a lost and dying world, of course He must be mad at me for leaving my job and going to Bible College, thank you for revealing that to me I would have never considered that apart from your deep spiritual insight – NOT!*

Whether these afflictions are in the home, workplace, or ministry, share in them, persevere through them.

### **Pastor Wanted**

A posting for "Pastor Wanted" was replied by this gentleman and it reads:

Dear Gentleman,

Understanding your pulpit is vacant; I should like to apply for the position. I have many qualifications. I've been a preacher with much success as a writer. Some say I'm a good organizer. I have been a leader most places I've been.

I'm over 50 years of age and have never preached in one place for more than three years. In some places I have left town after my work caused riots and disturbances. I must admit I have been in jail three or four times, but not because of any real wrong-doing.

My health is not too good, though I still accomplish a great deal. The churches I have preached in have been small, though located in several large cities.

I've not gotten along well with religious leaders in the towns where I preached. In fact, some have threatened me and even attacked me physically. I am not too good at keeping records. I have been known to forget whom I have baptized.

However, if you can use me, I promise to do my best for you,

Sincerely, the Apostle Paul

### **Christ's Prisoner**

God uses afflictions and hard times for His purposes, notice Paul in prison, but look who he says he is a prisoner of in verse 8; *His Prisoner!* Paul is not saying I am Nero's prisoner, nor Rome's prisoner, but I am a prisoner of Christ.

I take you back to last week's study - The Impenetrable Prison. Paul knew whose he was (the Lord Jesus), and he knew who was with him in that prison (The Lord Jesus); therefore he was immovable, and impenetrable.

### **Don't be Confused**

We get confused what success really is in the ministry of serving the Lord, or just living. Somehow with our American mindset, we confuse hard times with failures, God is working just as greatly in flower garden as He is in the compost pile. They both are a part of each other.

*(Isaiah 42:4 NKJV) He will not fail nor be discouraged, Till He has established justice in the earth; And the coastlands shall wait for His law."*

We are to persevere through the disasters and afflictions, be partakers in them knowing God is working in the midst of them.

### 3.) The Man/Woman of God who Perseveres: Is Not to be Moveable – but Unmovable (1: 9-18)

**(2 Timothy 1:9 NKJV) who has saved us and called us with a holy calling, not according to our works, but according to His own purpose and grace which was given to us in Christ Jesus before time began,**

**(2 Timothy 1:10 NKJV) but has now been revealed by the appearing of our Savior Jesus Christ, who has abolished death and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel,**

#### **Called Us/Saved Us/ All by Grace**

He called us, He saved us, not according to our works, but His grace. Your salvation is by grace, and so is your ministry, and blessings. It is all grace, it is unmerited and unearned. We know we are saved by grace, but somehow we think that our works will get us extra blessings. This is our Blessed Assurance.

“We are born broken. We live mending. The grace of God is the glue.”

Grace, the finished work of Christ, is our glue or else we will become unglued, dismantled, broken apart, as we think this is something to do with us. We have been saved by grace and not works, Praise the Lord:

*Ephesians 2:8–10 (NKJV) <sup>8</sup> For by grace you have been saved through faith, and that not of yourselves; it is the gift of God, <sup>9</sup> not of works, lest anyone should boast. <sup>10</sup> For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God prepared beforehand that we should walk in them.*

#### **Doesn't James Say**

But doesn't James say faith without works is dead. Yes, but understand this, it is not faith and works, it is not faith or work, it is faith that works. You are so blessed by God's grace that you find yourself just responding in loving, and service, sharing, and praying. You are just responding what he has poured out on you, it is just faith that works.

*James 2:18 (NKJV) <sup>18</sup> But someone will say, “You have faith, and I have works.” Show me your faith without your works, and I will show you my faith by my works.*

Paul tells Timothy, your salvation and calling is all by grace: unmerited, undeserved, unearned grace.

#### **Grace Manifested in Jesus Christ / I see His Power in Nature**

Notice where the grace and love of God is manifested, in Jesus Christ. People will say I don't need to go to church on Sunday, my church is in the woods, or on the golf course, or on the beach. That is where I meet with God, I see all his power and creativity there, it is there I fellowship with Him. No doubt all those things are true about His creativity and power:

*(Psalms 19:1 NKJV) The heavens declare the glory of God; And the firmament shows His handiwork.*

*(Romans 1:20 NKJV) For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without excuse,*

#### **Nature Shows His Power / But not his Love**

Yes nature shows His power and creativity, but nature does not show his love and grace. The love and grace of God is only seen in the person of Jesus Christ, and most specifically, the cross. It is in the Word, in worshipping, in unity of the believers, in the fellowship of the brethren that we see His love and grace.

*John 3:16 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life.*

#### **Nature cannot show you verse 10**

*abolished death and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel,*

### **Nature Will show you Death / But will not Comfort you In Death**

Nature will show you death with hurricanes, tornadoes, and blizzards, but it won't show you what is said here, it says he **abolished death**. Paul like in verse one is guilty of the name-it, claim-it. He is claiming his promise of eternal life, Paul knows death is imminent, but it writing in power.

You may say the woods and the golf course, and the beach are your church, but when death is imminent, they won't bring you comfort, only the promises of His Word will give you comfort, and power.

### **Abraham Lincoln / Abolished Slavery**

When Abraham Lincoln abolished slavery (Emancipation Proclamation – 01/01/1863), America became a new world. The former slaves were free to walk in freedom, no more looking over their shoulder, no more the whip coming against their back. The Gettysburg Proclamation declare to the whole world, you are free, slavery has been abolished.

### **We Can walk in Full Assurance**

We can walk in full assurance of eternal life, and freedom from the bondages of sin, no longer looking over our shoulder, no longer worrying of death to come, but looking forward to the fact and assurance that we know - that we know, that our last breathe here on earth will be our first breathe in heaven.

We know these things are true because we know His Word, His promises, and as we studied last week, we know His Word is reliable.

### **(2 Timothy 1:11 NKJV) to which I was appointed a preacher, an apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles.**

Based on what we have just read, nothing could move Paul!

Preacher – proclaiming the Good News to the unsaved – most definitely needed.

### **Teachers Needed / Avoid Topicals**

Teachers – is what is really needed. The church and Christians today have been preached to death, the problem is that they don't grow because all they know is the salvation message. That is why we go through the Bible, verse-by-verse. The problem with topical messages is that we can pick a subject and ride it to death. Continually teaching on child rearing, family, marriage, or witnessing.

### **Jesus Didn't Teach much on These Topics**

If you think about it, Jesus didn't teach that much on those subjects, when He did it was powerful, but we don't have chapters upon chapters on marriage do we?

A few verses in Ephesians 5, a few in 1 Corinthians 7, a verse in Hebrews 13:4, so a few verses, and several stories about marriage throughout the Bible, but all in all, not that much on marriage.

How about finances. Have you ever heard the quote from pastors that Jesus spoke more about giving, in terms of money, than he did on hell. I've heard that several times and my studies just can't qualify that statement.

### **What Did Jesus Speak Most On**

What do we find Jesus speaking of mostly in the Scriptures is the big picture: Eternity, the Father, Salvation, Justification. You see when you have the big picture, then all those other things fall into place.

### **Verse-by-verse is always in the right proportion**

Verse-by-verse is always in the right proportion because we just take the verses that are before us, and speak to them and about them. You who are going to teach or go out and start a work, just stick to verse by verse, you will never go wrong. Don't try to figure out what the people want to hear, God knows.

### **Always Right on Time**

And on that note, verse-by-verse, is always right on time. You will never have to worry if this is what God wants you to speak, because God will not give His Word independent of Himself, so His Word will speak to the heart of the people always.

When we were in Ireland, we went to support one of the Calvary Chapels there in Galway. The pastor came to me and said you know we just keep going through the bible and this week is 1 Corinthians 6, we will be talking about sexual immorality, it might be a little heavy for a group of missionaries. I said one thing we know, God's word is always right on time, and if these are the verses you are on, then we know these are the verses God is going to show Himself through.

*"What happened, the father of one of the youth that came on the mission trip, (his daughter went to the Sunday Service), he came up to me with tears in his eyes, he said his daughter had been struggling with her purity. all of her friends are having sex, and she was tired of waiting, she reached the point of why wait, she felt like she was the last virgin in the world, she was ready to quit, but then she heard the message, and felt refreshed, excited, and thankful she has been faithful the Lord. He said if she got nothing else out of the trip, that it was worth every penny just for that Sunday morning." Praise the Lord and to God be the Glory."*

Verse by verse will always be right on time, and in the right proportion.

God's word always unique to every last person, though written to the multitude, by the Spirit it becomes unique to each person individually.

**(2 Timothy 1:12 NKJV) For this reason I also suffer these things; nevertheless I am not ashamed, for I know whom I have believed and am persuaded that He is able to keep what I have committed to Him until that Day.**

Based on what we have just read, nothing could move Paul!

I suffer these things because I was a preacher and teacher, but he is not ashamed, but assured!

### **The Whom verses the What / The Whom will get you through the Dark Damp Dungeons**

You Bible highlighters, highlight that word "Whom". Notice it is not what I believe, but whom I believe. Whom is what will get you through the dark damp dungeons of life. Lots of people know what they believe, but not the Whom. The what will never see you through the dark, damp dungeons of life. It is the reality of know the whom. The intimate and personal relationship.

The people who know the Whom they believe, but might not know all the what, they are a joy to hang around and share with, because they know the who. When you know the whom, then the situation will never dictate how you feel.

### **Trust the Damp Dungeons Based on the Cross**

You will say Lord I may be in this dark damp dungeon, you've allowed it, but I trust you. How and why do I trust you, look what you've done for me on the cross, how could I ever not trust you.

Paul says I know Whom I believe in. It is the whom, as Job would say  
*(Job 19:25 NKJV) For I know that my Redeemer lives, And He shall stand at last on the earth;*  
*(Job 19:26 NKJV) And after my skin is destroyed, this I know, That in my flesh I shall see God,*

***He is able to keep what I have committed to Him until that Day.***

Committed – in the greek it is the word used for making a bank deposit. I entrusted my life to Jesus, He is able to keep it.

Also noticed back in verse 8, that saved and called are in the past tense. It is a done deal, the down payment has been made, God will meet you, either in the air or with outstretched arms before the throne. Be assured of that.

**Then the theme of this book, for Timothy and for us:**

**(2 Timothy 1:13 NKJV) Hold fast the pattern of sound words which you have heard from me, in faith and love which are in Christ Jesus.**

**(2 Timothy 1:14 NKJV) That good thing which was committed to you, keep by the Holy Spirit who dwells in us.**

**Passing the Mantel / Stand Strong Timothy**

Yet with all this, what is Paul's heart, his young protégé Timothy. He writes him to encourage him to continue in the ministry in strength and power. It was the passing of the mantel, Timothy would now have to be the one who would lead and give spiritual leadership to the churches in the days of persecution. No small task, Paul will tell Timothy you must persevere, you must be a pattern for others to follow, you must prevail against the perils before you, and you must preach the Word.

**Last Words**

These are the last words of the greatest pastor/teacher/evangelist that ever walked the earth, next to Jesus. We should make this book become a part of our very being.

Based on what we have just read, nothing could move Paul!

**Theme of the Book:**

*(2 Timothy 1:13 NKJV) Hold fast the pattern of sound words which you have heard from me, in faith and love which are in Christ Jesus.*

*(2 Timothy 1:14 NKJV) That good thing which was committed to you, keep by the Holy Spirit who dwells in us.*

**Hold fast to sound words.**

Sound – meaning healthy,

And the Greek for words here is “logos”, the same logos as in John 1:1

*(John 1:1 KJV) In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.*

The Bread of Life dwelling in you. Hold on to the Bread of Life Dwelling in you, hold on to Words he has taught you.

**(2 Timothy 1:15 NKJV) This you know, that all those in Asia have turned away from me, among whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes.**

Paul abandoned – But based on what we have just read, nothing could move Paul!

Paul, or more specifically, God names two by name, recorded for eternity, for all to read.

There is a place for identifying those who are poisons to the church. I believe Paul is being gracious by just saying they turned away. For Paul to record this, he is exposing them to protect the flock from them. If there are those who are preaching and leading people astray, they need to be identified.

**(2 Timothy 1:16 NKJV) The Lord grant mercy to the household of Onesiphorus, for he often refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain;**  
**(2 Timothy 1:17 NKJV) but when he arrived in Rome, he sought me out very zealously and found me.**  
**(2 Timothy 1:18 NKJV) The Lord grant to him that he may find mercy from the Lord in that Day; and you know very well how many ways he ministered to me at Ephesus.**

Onesiphoros, (on-ay-sif-or-os) meaning profit-bearer.

I like the amplified Bible, it says “bracing me like fresh air.” How awesome to be a breath of fresh air in some ones hour on need.

There you go for the nursing home and hospital visitation ministry.

Onesiphorous refreshed Paul, who went on to refresh others – you never know how far you refreshment of others goes

***and was not ashamed of my chain***

Onesiphorus, a contrast to these other two. Notice God is recording for all of history this man’s work of love. He is doing the same with you, the question is, what has He recorded about you lately.

Theme of the Book:

*2 Timothy 1:13–14 (NKJV) <sup>13</sup> Hold fast the pattern of sound words which you have heard from me, in faith and love which are in Christ Jesus. <sup>14</sup> That good thing which was committed to you, keep by the Holy Spirit who dwells in us.*

Outline: 2 Timothy 1:7-18:

1. The Man/Woman of God who Perseveres: Is Not to be Afraid - but have Power, Love and a Sound Mind (1:7)
2. The Man/Woman of God who Perseveres: Is Not to be Ashamed – but a Partaker of Affliction (1:8)
3. The Man/Woman of God who Perseveres: Is Not to be Moveable – but Unmovable (1: 9-18)

**Prayer**

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

**In Every Study**

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

## Chapter 2

Passage: 2 Timothy 2:1-7

Title: Be Strong in the Grace

Summary: Here in chapter 2 we continue to build off of, and be reminded of the calling to “hold fast”, all for the sake of finishing well before and unto our Lord who is worth it. Today’s study we look at grace (unmerited favor of God for us), and the strength that is in grace, and the power it has in our personal relationship with the Lord, and our interpersonal relationship with others in our lives.

Verse one says, therefore. So anytime we see the word therefore we have to ask, what is it there for? And it takes us back to chapter one and all the instruction Paul had given Timothy in chapter one. And for us most specifically to hold fast to the pattern, finish well.

*2 Timothy 1:13–14 (NKJV) <sup>13</sup> Hold fast the pattern of sound words which you have heard from me, in faith and love which are in Christ Jesus. <sup>14</sup> That good thing which was committed to you, keep by the Holy Spirit who dwells in us.*

And so the continual building off of how we are to “hold fast”, and the continual reminder to hold fast, and finish well, our text for today:

*2 Timothy 2:1–13 (NKJV) <sup>1</sup> You therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. <sup>2</sup> And the things that you have heard from me among many witnesses, commit these to faithful men who will be able to teach others also. <sup>3</sup> You therefore must endure hardship as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. <sup>4</sup> No one engaged in warfare entangles himself with the affairs of this life, that he may please him who enlisted him as a soldier. <sup>5</sup> And also if anyone competes in athletics, he is not crowned unless he competes according to the rules. <sup>6</sup> The hardworking farmer must be first to partake of the crops. <sup>7</sup> Consider what I say, and may the Lord give you understanding in all things. <sup>8</sup> Remember that Jesus Christ, of the seed of David, was raised from the dead according to my gospel, <sup>9</sup> for which I suffer trouble as an evildoer, even to the point of chains; but the word of God is not chained. <sup>10</sup> Therefore I endure all things for the sake of the elect, that they also may obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus with eternal glory. <sup>11</sup> This is a faithful saying: For if we died with Him, We shall also live with Him. <sup>12</sup> If we endure, We shall also reign with Him. If we deny Him, He also will deny us. <sup>13</sup> If we are faithless, He remains faithful; He cannot deny Himself.*

### Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

### **In Every Study**

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

**(2 Timothy 2:1 NKJV) You therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.**

Grace – unmerited favor.

Verse one, strength in grace. It’s a beautiful release for us. It’s God’s performance over mine and it’s freeing. Rather than looking at myself and how I am doing to determine my acceptance before him, I look at him and how he is doing. I can look down in verse 13 and see that he remains faithful even while I’m unfaithful or if I should be unfaithful. Therefore, the performance is solid because it’s based on Him and not me because

- God is faithful to His word, it is done.
- God is faithful to His word, I will never leave you nor forsake you.
- God is faithful to all the words that he speaks to us.

He tells Timothy here, be strong in grace. The strength is in grace. Weakness is in works. Your works will always lead you to weakness and it will always leave you short. It will always leave you

asking, did I do enough? It will always leave you in doubt of being accepted and it will always leave you have I done enough.

*2 Timothy 2:13 (NKJV) <sup>13</sup> If we are faithless, He remains faithful; He cannot deny Himself.*

*Isaiah 55:11 (NKJV) <sup>11</sup> So shall My word be that goes forth from My mouth; It shall not return to Me void, But it shall accomplish what I please, And it shall prosper in the thing for which I sent it.*

*Hebrews 13:5 (NKJV) <sup>5</sup> Let your conduct be without covetousness; be content with such things as you have. For He Himself has said, "I will never leave you nor forsake you."*

*John 19:30 (NKJV) <sup>30</sup> So when Jesus had received the sour wine, He said, "It is finished!" And bowing His head, He gave up His spirit.*

People, Christians pastors, and churches are often afraid to speak on this grace because they're afraid it would become a license to sin and it's literally the furthest thing from that. Grace leads us to repentance.

*Romans 2:4 (NKJV) <sup>4</sup> Or do you despise the riches of His goodness, forbearance, and longsuffering, not knowing that the goodness of God leads you to repentance?*

This principle works in your relationships too, by the way. But I know for many it's just hard to apply because of what I just said. People are afraid that if they show someone grace who has hurt or offended them, that the person will use it to walk all over them and not take their offense seriously. But here's the point that I must say. Grace is either biblical or it is not. And if I am to be like Jesus, how can I be like him apart from grace? Grace is one of the core attributes of Jesus Christ. Grace, mercy, peace, love. These are core attributes of Jesus that can't be separated or put into compartments. If I'm to be like Jesus, grace is one of the attributes that I need to live by and give to others as I receive it myself from the Lord.

I challenge any and all Christians to apply grace in their relationships, to apply grace to that person over their performance and the expectation that's put upon them, that you simply give them grace and love them with grace in the relationship that you have with them. Yes, there is still discipline. Yes, there is still correction, but it's in the realm of grace.

What is it called when you owe a debt and have a period of time? A Grace Period.

And as you apply this grace in your personal relationships which should be applied as freely as we desire to receive it from the Lord himself, you will need to pray in a daily prayer, Lord, I choose grace. I give it to so and so grace. Lord, I'm going to give grace today. Give me the power to give grace and to stick with the grace that I give and not to pull it back from the person I extended it to. You know, Christian, grace is a choice. It's a choice to receive it and it's a choice to give it. But grace is a choice.

Grace breaks hard hearts. It broke mine with Jesus. As Jesus gave me grace, he broke my heart and grace broke through and reached me as I see that it was his great grace that he loved me. And it was his kindness therefore of his grace that led me to repentance. And you will find truly the same when you give grace. It breaks through hard hearts. It breaks through and softens hearts. Be like Jesus. Give grace in your relationships.

In verse one we read a story in 2<sup>nd</sup> Chronicles 33 of Manasseh. He was an evil son and he was disciplined by the Lord. He was brought to a place where he cried out to the Lord asking for forgiveness of his wicked ways and the wicked things that he has done. And then we read that God heeded his prayer and forgave him. We read the ultimate grace. Then we read him tearing down idolatrous altars and we read him building up godly altars. And what we read is, and what we see is, grace broke through his heart and yes, the play on words altar/alterd his life. When you receive grace and you truly understand the grace that you received, your life **will be altered**, and you will respond in kind to the grace you have received.

*2 Chronicles 33:1-9 (NKJV) <sup>1</sup> Manasseh was twelve years old when he became king, and he reigned fifty-five years in Jerusalem. <sup>2</sup> But he did evil in the sight of the LORD, according to the abominations of the nations whom the LORD had cast out before the children of Israel. <sup>3</sup> For he rebuilt the high places which Hezekiah his father had broken down; he raised up altars for the Baals, and made*

wooden images; and he worshiped all the host of heaven and served them. <sup>4</sup> He also built altars in the house of the LORD, of which the LORD had said, "In Jerusalem shall My name be forever." <sup>5</sup> And he built altars for all the host of heaven in the two courts of the house of the LORD. <sup>6</sup> Also he caused his sons to pass through the fire in the Valley of the Son of Hinnom; he practiced soothsaying, used witchcraft and sorcery, and consulted mediums and spiritists. He did much evil in the sight of the LORD, to provoke Him to anger. <sup>7</sup> He even set a carved image, the idol which he had made, in the house of God, of which God had said to David and to Solomon his son, "In this house and in Jerusalem, which I have chosen out of all the tribes of Israel, I will put My name forever;" <sup>8</sup> and I will not again remove the foot of Israel from the land which I have appointed for your fathers—only if they are careful to do all that I have commanded them, according to the whole law and the statutes and the ordinances by the hand of Moses." <sup>9</sup> So Manasseh seduced Judah and the inhabitants of Jerusalem to do more evil than the nations whom the LORD had destroyed before the children of Israel.

**2 Chronicles 33:10–13 (NKJV)** <sup>10</sup> And the LORD spoke to Manasseh and his people, but they would not listen. <sup>11</sup> Therefore the LORD brought upon them the captains of the army of the king of Assyria, who took Manasseh with hooks, bound him with bronze fetters, and carried him off to Babylon. <sup>12</sup> Now when he was in affliction, he implored the LORD his God, and humbled himself greatly before the God of his fathers, <sup>13</sup> and prayed to Him; and He received his entreaty, heard his supplication, and brought him back to Jerusalem into his kingdom. Then Manasseh knew that the LORD was God.

**2 Chronicles 33:14–17 (NKJV)** <sup>14</sup> After this he built a wall outside the City of David on the west side of Gihon, in the valley, as far as the entrance of the Fish Gate; and it enclosed Ophel, and he raised it to a very great height. Then he put military captains in all the fortified cities of Judah. <sup>15</sup> He took away the foreign gods and the idol from the house of the LORD, and all the altars that he had built in the mount of the house of the LORD and in Jerusalem; and he cast them out of the city. <sup>16</sup> He also repaired the altar of the LORD, sacrificed peace offerings and thank offerings on it, and commanded Judah to serve the LORD God of Israel. <sup>17</sup> Nevertheless the people still sacrificed on the high places, but only to the LORD their God.

**(2 Timothy 2:2 NKJV) And the things that you have heard from me among many witnesses, commit these to faithful men who will be able to teach others also.**

Verse two. It's a teaching ministry and notice the teaching ministry is to faithful ministers who then go forth and replicate what they've been taught, what they've learned, and it goes on and on and on. That's why we take such a strong emphasis on teaching the word because it is what reproduces is the word of God.

In verses 5 and 6 we will see the analogy of being soldiers and athletes and farmers, and in all those cases there is a training that comes before the sending and the going.

Verse two that you heard from many witnesses, what that means to us is Timothy, the same teaching you've heard from me has been confirmed as the same teaching that I've given all others for all of my ministry. Paul stuck to the word and the word that was given to him of grace by the Lord Jesus. He didn't change his teaching to meet the favor of the day or what was acceptable among the popular opinion. He just stuck to the word and anyone that you would talk to would say, who heard Paul teach, that they all heard the same thing. They didn't hear something new, but they heard something that was consistently taught regardless of the ebbs and tides of the culture and the desire of the people and the times. And so too must we stick to the same thing.

**(2 Timothy 2:3 NKJV) You therefore must endure hardship as a good soldier of Jesus Christ.**

**(2 Timothy 2:4 NKJV) No one engaged in warfare entangles himself with the affairs of this life, that he may please him who enlisted him as a soldier.**

Verse three. Soldiers go where the war is. That's how it works out. The soldier deploys to where the captain sends them.

Verse four. You don't have to quit your job to be a soldier for Christ but truly we are enlisted in the Lord's army when we ask him to become the captain of our salvation. If he is our captain of our salvation, if he is the king, our king is at war and therefore that makes us soldiers by default. Because if he's at war, there's a war that follows us. But as I said, you don't have to quit your job to be a soldier for Christ but you need to live your life to not be entangled with all the cares of the world and all the things that distract. But you have to be in a place that you're deployable, that you can go where the Lord calls you to go and what the Lord calls you to do. We can't let the

things of the world, the things of work, the things of sports, the things of hobby keep us from deploying to where God has called us to be the witness for him.

Verse four. We read of a story of a man who was called but he said, let me bury my father, then I will follow you. And it's misunderstood that the man's father just died and that Jesus was being harsh, demanding the man not go to the funeral. Far be it. What was the context was the man said, when my dad dies, then I'll follow you. He was putting some condition before following Jesus. He put the affairs of the world above the calling of Jesus. He wasn't able to deploy when Jesus called him because he had determined that when his father died, then he would leave and that could've been for many reasons. He didn't want to battle his father saying, what are you doing? Why would you do this? Or, it could very well been, when my father dies, I'll get his inheritance. Then I can live off of his inheritance and then I don't have to walk by faith.

**Matthew 8:19–22 (NKJV)** <sup>19</sup> Then a certain scribe came and said to Him, "Teacher, I will follow You wherever You go." <sup>20</sup> And Jesus said to him, "Foxes have holes and birds of the air *have* nests, but the Son of Man has nowhere to lay *His* head." <sup>21</sup> Then another of His disciples said to Him, "Lord, let me first go and bury my father." <sup>22</sup> But Jesus said to him, "Follow Me, and let the dead bury their own dead."

But then we have another side. It's the story of Elijah and Elisha. Elijah came, called Elisha, and immediately as he was working it says, he burned his equipment, made sacrifice with an oxen and then followed Elijah to a calling that was put upon him. And it all comes down to the choice, the calling. As it says in verse four, that he may please him who enlisted him as a soldier.

**1 Kings 19:19–21 (NKJV)** <sup>19</sup> So he departed from there, and found Elisha the son of Shaphat, who was plowing with twelve yoke of oxen before him, and he was with the twelfth. Then Elijah passed by him and threw his mantle on him. <sup>20</sup> And he left the oxen and ran after Elijah, and said, "Please let me kiss my father and my mother, and then I will follow you." And he said to him, "Go back again, for what have I done to you?" <sup>21</sup> So Elisha turned back from him, and took a yoke of oxen and slaughtered them and boiled their flesh, using the oxen's equipment, and gave it to the people, and they ate. Then he arose and followed Elijah, and became his servant.

**(2 Timothy 2:5 NKJV) And also if anyone competes in athletics, he is not crowned unless he competes according to the rules.**

**(2 Timothy 2:6 NKJV) The hard-working farmer must be first to partake of the crops.**

Verse five. Athletics take discipline and commitment and sacrifice. There are no shortcuts in athletics if you're to win the crown. The word here for "competes" means to "strive for mastery", and hence we see the calling and the degree there of it. And, the word for "athlete" was the word used for a professional athlete and not an amateur, so again the depth and the degree of the calling.

Verse 6. And so too with farming. It takes discipline. It takes commitment. It takes sacrifice. There is no shortcut if you're to bring in the harvest.

Both require work within the rules and laws of nature. There is no short cutting them. The farmer must till the land. He must plant the seed. He must water the seed and he must labor over it continually. There is no shortcut. The casting seeds and expecting a harvest, rocks have to be picked out, soil has to be turned over, seed has to reach underneath the soil. Trees need to be cleared, vines and weeds and the likes need to be taken out. Farming is hard. It takes tremendous discipline and there is no harvest apart from that discipline.

Verse 6 – Paul says you have to partake of the harvest before you can give it out. I must train before I can coach. There is no shortcut in this.

Paul is talking to Timothy about ministry, yes; but truly is pastoral ministry a higher calling the parenting and marriage? I think not. So the application and the degree and the depth of the calling and requirement to strive, to train, to sacrifice, to discipline, are the very same we must and should apply to our preparing for and leading of our parenting and marriages.

And hear ye this.... Athletes and farmers and soldiers yes they may start with zeal but zeal is not enough to carry you on and to keep you going on zeal is easily tampered down by the rigor and demands of everyday life that we face. There is a discipline that is involved, and people so often

confuse spiritual things with emotional things such as when the Lord gives a calling, a person can say I'm waiting for the zeal of the Lord, the passion of the Lord, to give me passion and zeal to do this spiritual thing. Yes there are times where God does press upon us, but here in our passage we read the calling comes coupled with discipline, like that of being a soldier, of being a farmer, of being an athlete. Christian we must pray this prayer continually, Lord I chose to do this and be this, now Lord I pray empower my choice, empower the choice I made so I may do it well, be disciplined to not just start it, but to maintain it, and not just maintain it but to finish it well!

I remember years ago talking to a friend who went into the ministry and his ministry became very much a prosperity ministry and healings were to demonstrate to prove and I truly believe that there were real healings and miraculous healings. But in conversation along the way, one night I remember him saying something that kind of came across as the ends justify the means to which I go, well, wait a minute, wait a minute. What are you saying? I go, the ends never will justify false means. False means will lead most likely the false ends and therefore not in agreement with what you're saying here. So what is he saying is that they have ready and staged, this is how I took it, that if miracles didn't happen, they had manmade miracles ready to roll out staged and that would stir the people. And then they would respond to what they believed was respond in faith, to which I believe simply responding in the flesh because the spirit wasn't moving. And when I called him out on that, and yes, I was young and the Lord maybe just six months to a year, but I could tell there were rules and you had to work within God's rules, not man's rules. And when I called him out on it, he and his wife actually questioned my salvation and started to witness to me like I wasn't saved.

In all competition there are rules and guidelines we have to follow, break the rules and you are disqualified. I remember in 9<sup>th</sup> grade football we were playing Seneca valley. They were a powerhouse, and one of the reason was that they were not very smart and everybody kept flunking, so they were in 9<sup>th</sup> grade but 2 years older than us. But anyway, they were betting us pretty good in the first half and our star player got thrown out of the game for fighting, we were done and they really started to pull away before the half was over. So at halftime our coach told one of the kids to change his jersey with our star players jersey, so when the second half began we had our star player in the game and we started to make a comeback. But he got in another fight, the coach from the other team ran out and looked at him and knew who he was (probably because he was the only one of us in 9<sup>th</sup> grade with a full beard. The coach called his players and walked off the field., it didn't matter that we made a comeback, we broke the rules and were disqualified. And, we were left on the sidelines, left on the field, all the people in the stands looking at us..... we were totally humiliated! And, that is what is the resultant when any Christian is exposed for trying to work outside the rules of spirituality.

I think Paul must have been a sports fan. He makes these reference in First Corinthians 9:24 and 25, Philippians Three verse 14, Hebrews chapter 12:1 and 2. Seems like he had some liking to sports. And I think that's a great thing and I think there is power in using our likes to reach people with the same likes. You like drawing, use that to reach people who like drawing. You like reading, use that to reach people who like reading. You like sports, you like cooking, you like hunting, you like sewing, just so many things that God uses for us to connect with people of the same likes.

*1 Corinthians 9:24–25 (NKJV) <sup>24</sup> Do you not know that those who run in a race all run, but one receives the prize? Run in such a way that you may obtain it. <sup>25</sup> And everyone who competes for the prize is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a perishable crown, but we for an imperishable crown.*

*Philippians 3:14 (NKJV) <sup>14</sup> I press toward the goal for the prize of the upward call of God in Christ Jesus.*

*Hebrews 12:1–2 (NKJV) <sup>1</sup> Therefore we also, since we are surrounded by so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which so easily ensnares us, and let us run with endurance the race that is set before us, <sup>2</sup> looking unto Jesus, the author and finisher of our faith, who for the joy that was set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God.*

And if God calls you to do some type of ministry, whatever it may be, using your likes, just do it. Don't worry about people's opinions and judgments and criticality. I can remember myself 30

years ago speaking to my one friend who had a Camaro and was leading the Camaro Club. And I was like, "What a worldly thing to do. What an excuse," and all those things. And yes, I'm being critical and judgmental, I know it, and I thank God that he shows me my heart. But it was interesting because the point that I make about what God showed me was it was a growing church. It was a great teaching church. They were on the radio, they were doing outreaches, and all these things.

But here's what I can say with all honesty. I met more people when I would say, "How did you find the church?" And I met more people who said, "Through the Camaro club," than I did of people who said through the radio and through the community outreaches. And that is a fact. So maybe God's calling you to use your likings, cooking and sewing, whatever it may be. Do it. Don't wait for someone's opinion and don't wait for someone's approval. God gave you the go, go and do it. Just like Elisha, and don't look back.

**(2 Timothy 2:7 NKJV) Consider what I say, and may the Lord give you understanding in all things.**

Verse seven. God gives the understanding. Notice that pastor, parent, youth leader, children's church here is a vital key after you teach and speak verse seven. Consider what I say and may the Lord give you understanding in all things. We need to then go and pray to the Holy Spirit to give them understanding supernaturally, to apply it to their life of what we just taught from the word of God.

Look at Ezekiel 36-37. What an amazing story we have here as he's continually told to prophesy, to speak the word of God. Over and over and over he speaks the word of God. But then we read that he's told to speak to the breath and the breath is the Holy Spirit. He's to now go pray to the Holy Spirit that the Holy Spirit does the revelation of the words that were spoken. And it's when he goes and prays to the Spirit of God that the bones come to life. We see just a great application for us as leaders, as teachers, as parents teaching our children, that after we speak, there's a place to go and pray to the Holy Spirit that he will go and speak and make it clear what the word of God that was just spoken to them.

*Ezekiel 37:3-8 (NKJV) <sup>3</sup> And He said to me, "Son of man, can these bones live?" So I answered, "O Lord GOD, You know." <sup>4</sup> Again He said to me, "Prophesy to these bones, and say to them, 'O dry bones, hear the word of the LORD!' <sup>5</sup> Thus says the Lord GOD to these bones: "Surely I will cause breath to enter into you, and you shall live. <sup>6</sup> I will put sinews on you and bring flesh upon you, cover you with skin and put breath in you; and you shall live. Then you shall know that I am the LORD." ' ' <sup>7</sup> So I prophesied as I was commanded; and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and suddenly a rattling; and the bones came together, bone to bone. <sup>8</sup> Indeed, as I looked, the sinews and the flesh came upon them, and the skin covered them over; but there was no breath in them.*

*Ezekiel 37:9-10 (NKJV) <sup>9</sup> Also He said to me, "Prophesy to the breath, prophesy, son of man, and say to the breath, 'Thus says the Lord GOD: "Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe on these slain, that they may live." ' ' <sup>10</sup> So I prophesied as He commanded me, and breath came into them, and they lived, and stood upon their feet, an exceedingly great army.*

And Jesus makes that a promise (John 16) that when he goes, he will send the Holy Spirit who will be our teacher, our helper to help us understand the word. Oh, Christian, the power of prayer after you teach, after you speak and after you give instruction. I pray that you make that a non-negotiable part, every one of you teachers, that after you teach, you go pray for every person that you just taught. And I pray that we do it here in the church. That on Sunday, groups of people will pray that what the word was just spoken will go and the Holy Spirit will make it understandable. I go and pray after my teachings. Lord, I pray that the Holy Spirit you would make it understandable to them, the word that was just taught. And then on Tuesday night, we do the same. Many times we come and we pray the same passages that we covered on Sunday to bring them back again and pray for those who heard the word.

*John 16:13-15 (NKJV) <sup>13</sup> However, when He, the Spirit of truth, has come, He will guide you into all truth; for He will not speak on His own authority, but whatever He hears He will speak; and He will tell you things to come. <sup>14</sup> He will glorify Me, for He will take of what is Mine and declare it to you. <sup>15</sup> All things that the Father has are Mine. Therefore I said that He will take of Mine and declare it to you.*

## Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

## **In Every Study**

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

Passage: 2 Timothy 2:8-13

Title: The Word of God Cannot be Chained!

Summary: The imprisoned Paul says words of power, speaking of the Word of God, and he says, "the Word of God is not chained". He speaks more than a metaphor, he speaks truth, and the kind of truth that breaks every chain and stronghold in a person's life, regardless of their situation, prisons or palaces, God's Word cannot be bound! If this applies personally, then it also means we have a powerful prayer weapon at our disposal. Come join us as we open the powerful chain breaking Word of God.

Again, for context from last week, verse one says, therefore. So anytime we see the word therefore we have to ask, what is it there for? And it takes us back to chapter one and all the instruction Paul had given Timothy in chapter one. And for us most specifically to hold fast to the pattern, finish well.

*2 Timothy 1:13–14 (NKJV) <sup>13</sup> Hold fast the pattern of sound words which you have heard from me, in faith and love which are in Christ Jesus. <sup>14</sup> That good thing which was committed to you, keep by the Holy Spirit who dwells in us.*

And so the continual building off of how we are to "hold fast", and the continual reminder to hold fast, and finish well, our text for today:

*2 Timothy 2:1–13 (NKJV) <sup>1</sup> You therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. <sup>2</sup> And the things that you have heard from me among many witnesses, commit these to faithful men who will be able to teach others also. <sup>3</sup> You therefore must endure hardship as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. <sup>4</sup> No one engaged in warfare entangles himself with the affairs of this life, that he may please him who enlisted him as a soldier. <sup>5</sup> And also if anyone competes in athletics, he is not crowned unless he competes according to the rules. <sup>6</sup> The hardworking farmer must be first to partake of the crops. <sup>7</sup> Consider what I say, and may the Lord give you understanding in all things. <sup>8</sup> Remember that Jesus Christ, of the seed of David, was raised from the dead according to my gospel, <sup>9</sup> for which I suffer trouble as an evildoer, even to the point of chains; but the word of God is not chained. <sup>10</sup> Therefore I endure all things for the sake of the elect, that they also may obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus with eternal glory. <sup>11</sup> This is a faithful saying: For if we died with Him, We shall also live with Him. <sup>12</sup> If we endure, We shall also reign with Him. If we deny Him, He also will deny us. <sup>13</sup> If we are faithless, He remains faithful; He cannot deny Himself.*

**(2 Timothy 2:1 NKJV) You therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.**

Be strong in the grace – Grace is God's unmerited favor. Christian, today, this past week, the week to come, not in your strength or might..... your performance, but His performance, which is based on grace, may you be free and strong, my God loves me, apart from how well I did this week, or will do, simply because He is gracious unto me. When you can rest in "grace", you will find strength, because instead of worrying about how I am doing, you can just look to Him and trust what He desires to do in you, and you will be free to live freely in the love of God, and you will truly find strength in "Grace".

Christian may we never interpret any words of God apart from him who speaks them. They must all be in the light of him and his nature and his attributes of love and grace and mercy. We're to take his words as if we are standing face to face with him and He is speaking them, because truly that is what is happening. As the word of God be, is living and powerful. It's a living God speaking to us and He is speaking his heart to us. He speaks promises. He speaks power. He speaks warning. He speaks discipline. But in all of his words, He speaks His Word for our good. Because He is a good, good father. Amen.

**(2 Timothy 2:2 NKJV) And the things that you have heard from me among many witnesses, commit these to faithful men who will be able to teach others also.**

It is relational and instructional – may the Lord teach us His Word today. Our title today is from verse 9, "The Unchained Word of God".

**(2 Timothy 2:3 NKJV) You therefore must endure hardship as a good soldier of Jesus Christ.**

**(2 Timothy 2:4 NKJV) No one engaged in warfare entangles himself with the affairs of this life, that he may please him who enlisted him as a soldier.**

**(2 Timothy 2:5 NKJV) And also if anyone competes in athletics, he is not crowned unless he competes according to the rules.**

**(2 Timothy 2:6 NKJV) The hard-working farmer must be first to partake of the crops.**

The discipline of soldiers, athletes, and farmers. We must train like Olympians going for the prize.

*2 Timothy 2:15 (NKJV) <sup>15</sup> Be diligent to present yourself approved to God, a worker who does not need to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.*

*1 Corinthians 9:24–27 (NKJV) <sup>24</sup> Do you not know that those who run in a race all run, but one receives the prize? Run in such a way that you may obtain it. <sup>25</sup> And everyone who competes for the prize is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a perishable crown, but we for an imperishable crown. <sup>26</sup> Therefore I run thus: not with uncertainty. Thus I fight: not as one who beats the air. <sup>27</sup> But I discipline my body and bring it into subjection, lest, when I have preached to others, I myself should become disqualified.*

**(2 Timothy 2:7 NKJV) Consider what I say, and may the Lord give you understanding in all things.**

May the Lord give us understanding today in all we study, hear, and commit to our spiritual training. We studied last study the power of not just praying before we study/teach, but also the follow-up to praying after the study that the Spirit continues to reveal and seal the word just heard.

**(2 Timothy 2:8 NKJV) Remember that Jesus Christ, of the seed of David, was raised from the dead according to my gospel,**

**(2 Timothy 2:9 NKJV) for which I suffer trouble as an evildoer, even to the point of chains; but the word of God is not chained.**

In the days when tyrants did their will one of these despots ordered a man into his presence and asked him what his calling was. When he told him he was a blacksmith, he ordered him to go to his forge and make a chain. The man soon returned with a chain in his hand. "Go and make it longer," was the order of the tyrant. He soon appeared again, this time with a longer chain. "Go and make it still longer," was the order of the despot. This was repeated a number of times; and when finally the perplexed blacksmith appeared with a long chain in his hand, the despot gave the order to wrap the chain about him and cast him into the fire.

So the enemy, the world, and (even ourselves) determine to do (chain us and bind us), but God's Word is unchained, moves freely and powerfully and unhindered, and breaks down strongholds, moves about where He pleases and sets captives free, and for those we can't reach for whatever reason (far away, distant from God or us), we have a Word that can penetrate (by praying the Word) into prisons, closed borders, reach beyond the sea, find prodigals in their pit or palace, anywhere and everywhere this Word is unchained and can enter in, and this unchained word is a chain-breaker at that.

*2 Timothy 2:9 (NKJV) <sup>9</sup> for which I suffer trouble as an evildoer, even to the point of chains; but the word of God is not chained.*

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

*2 Corinthians 10:4–6 (NKJV) <sup>4</sup> For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal but mighty in God for pulling down strongholds, <sup>5</sup> casting down arguments and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, bringing every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ, <sup>6</sup> and being ready to punish all disobedience when your obedience is fulfilled.*

## Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV)* <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

## **In Every Study**

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV)* <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

**(2 Timothy 2:8 NKJV) Remember that Jesus Christ, of the seed of David, was raised from the dead according to my gospel,**

**(2 Timothy 2:9 NKJV) for which I suffer trouble as an evildoer, even to the point of chains; but the word of God is not chained.**

Verse 8. Paul gives a solidifying remember that Jesus Christ, the seed of David, was raised from the dead, according to my gospel. He's bringing Timothy back to the power that is in the word. And he speaks of the seed of David that takes us back to Genesis 3. It takes us back to Micah 5. It takes us to Isaiah 7 and 9, speaking of the birth of Christ, the immaculate conception. But it also takes us from his first coming to his second coming. And Genesis 22 speaking of the resurrection, Jonah, three days, three nights in the belly of the great fish, speaking of his resurrection. All of it reminding Timothy as he came first, so shall he come again. He's worth the fight. He's worth the endurance. And there is nothing that can stop him. There is no chain that binds this word of God. It shall come to pass.

*Genesis 3:15 (NKJV)* <sup>15</sup> And I will put enmity Between you and the woman, And between your seed and her Seed; He shall bruise your head, And you shall bruise His heel."

*Micah 5:2 (NKJV)* <sup>2</sup> "But you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, Though you are little among the thousands of Judah, Yet out of you shall come forth to Me The One to be Ruler in Israel, Whose goings forth are from of old, From everlasting."

*Isaiah 9:6-7 (NKJV)* <sup>6</sup> For unto us a Child is born, Unto us a Son is given; And the government will be upon His shoulder. And His name will be called Wonderful, Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace. <sup>7</sup> Of the increase of His government and peace There will be no end, Upon the throne of David and over His kingdom, To order it and establish it with judgment and justice From that time forward, even forever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.

*Isaiah 7:14 (NKJV)* <sup>14</sup> Therefore the Lord Himself will give you a sign: Behold, the virgin shall conceive and bear a Son, and shall call His name Immanuel.

*Genesis 22:6-8 (NKJV)* <sup>6</sup> So Abraham took the wood of the burnt offering and laid it on Isaac his son; and he took the fire in his hand, and a knife, and the two of them went together. <sup>7</sup> But Isaac spoke to Abraham his father and said, "My father!" And he said, "Here I am, my son." Then he said, "Look, the fire and the wood, but where is the lamb for a burnt offering?" <sup>8</sup> And Abraham said, "My son, God will provide for Himself the lamb for a burnt offering." So the two of them went together.

*Matthew 12:39-40 (NKJV)* <sup>39</sup> But He answered and said to them, "An evil and adulterous generation seeks after a sign, and no sign will be given to it except the sign of the prophet Jonah. <sup>40</sup> For as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the great fish, so will the Son of Man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

So live for this word. The word that was trying to be stopped by Haman when he tried to kill the Jews there in Persia. When Herod tried to kill the babe born there in Israel. And Hitler, when he came to try to destroy the whole nation, nothing could stop the word of God. It would be fulfilled just as God said it would be, and just as God says it shall be in the future. This word here in verse 8, speaking of the seed and speaking of the resurrection, speaks of his power past, power present, and power future. And that the word of God is eternal and it cannot be bound. Hebrews 13:8, "I am the same yesterday, today and forever." The eternal God is unchanging.

*Hebrews 13:8 (NKJV) <sup>8</sup> Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, today, and forever.*

And therefore, this word is unchanged and unchangeable because it's eternal from the unchanging God. It has the power to set people free. And Paul is telling Timothy and building on it. It's worth the fight. Endure the hardship, whatever it may be. And then, as we get into the future chapters, to preach the word, because it has the power of salvation and to change lives in it.

Verse eight, according to my Gospel, let it be noted that Paul didn't have a Gospel that was different than the Gospel of Jesus Christ. What he's saying is that it was his Gospel that he made personal. It's the same Gospel, but it was the Gospel that was personal to him. And he would preach it in his own personal way, but it was still the one and only way of Jesus Christ. And there's a place for us as Christians of making this Gospel personal. I need to be able to share it with people and therefore it has to be personal to me. I can't read somebody's book and try to preach their way of presenting the Gospel, even though it is the Gospel. But maybe you would read a book and it would become personal to you. That would be great.

But I always encourage people, spend time with the Lord on how you are going to present the Gospel and let it become personal, because when you do that will become part of you, and when it becomes part of you and you share it, you will share it very pointedly and very passionately, and you will be right on the mark of being able to convey it very clearly and precisely. Make it your own personal Gospel from your very heart.

**(2 Timothy 2:9 NKJV) for which I suffer trouble as an evildoer, even to the point of chains; but the word of God is not chained.**

In Acts 25, it's two years later. Paul is still bound with hatred. Let me say hatred towards him. Even two years later. And they even ask a letter to be written that the governor would allow Paul to leave and return from Caesarea to Jerusalem to stand trial. And the whole thing was a big farce and setup as they wanted to lay ambush and kill Paul just as they had wanted to before, but was stopped supernaturally. As Paul's nephew would overhear the plot and tell the guard who would tell the governor. And he would be delivered in the night by a whole contingency of Roman soldiers.

*Acts 23:12–15 (NKJV) <sup>12</sup> And when it was day, some of the Jews banded together and bound themselves under an oath, saying that they would neither eat nor drink till they had killed Paul. <sup>13</sup> Now there were more than forty who had formed this conspiracy. <sup>14</sup> They came to the chief priests and elders, and said, "We have bound ourselves under a great oath that we will eat nothing until we have killed Paul. <sup>15</sup> Now you, therefore, together with the council, suggest to the commander that he be brought down to you tomorrow, as though you were going to make further inquiries concerning him; but we are ready to kill him before he comes near."*

*Acts 24:27 (NKJV) <sup>27</sup> But after two years Porcius Festus succeeded Felix; and Felix, wanting to do the Jews a favor, left Paul bound.*

*Acts 25:1–4 (NKJV) <sup>1</sup> Now when Festus had come to the province, after three days he went up from Caesarea to Jerusalem. <sup>2</sup> Then the high priest and the chief men of the Jews informed him against Paul; and they petitioned him, <sup>3</sup> asking a favor against him, that he would summon him to Jerusalem—while they lay in ambush along the road to kill him. <sup>4</sup> But Festus answered that Paul should be kept at Caesarea, and that he himself was going there shortly.*

Even in prison, two years later, they still had this deep hatred towards Paul. You would think that they would've forgotten him by now. But they don't, and you know why? Because these two years that Paul's in prison, he didn't just sit in prison and have inner contemplation of his life and the situation of his life. He spent that time writing letters that we so greatly enjoy. He wrote letters from prison that went and changed the present world that they lived in and our current world today. And as those letters were being distributed, churches were being built. Churches were being strengthened. Missionaries were rising. The gospel was going forth. It was going deeper, greater and wider than one man could do on his own. Because he wrote letters that had been preserved for all to read, to be copied, to pass on. And t 2 Timothy 2:2 would say faithful men would learn it and then they would go and they would reproduce it. Faithful women would learn it and they would go and they would reproduce it. And what we see, the reason they hated Paul was because truly the word of God was unchained. It could not be stopped even in prison. And it

kept going further and further. And hence why they still would want to wait in ambush to kill him. And here's the power of our passage today. The word of God is unchained. It cannot be stopped. *2 Timothy 2:2 (NKJV) <sup>2</sup> And the things that you have heard from me among many witnesses, commit these to faithful men who will be able to teach others also.*

The power and in the discipline of being a soldier, farmer, an athlete, the key to discipline is faith. Believing God will meet me, speak to me, lead me, empower me. And the faith will convince me that there is gain in this discipline. And when I come to that place of faith, nothing can chain me and nothing will stop me from this place of discipline because I know the power of it.

**(2 Timothy 2:10 NKJV) Therefore I endure all things for the sake of the elect, that they also may obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus with eternal glory.**

Verse 10. This will get some of the so-called get your theological underwear all knotted up as we hear and we see the elect that would tend to be considered chosen by God, predestined. But then it says that they may obtain their salvation in Christ Jesus with eternal glory. And it's in the context of a word that went forth. That someone had to preach it, that they had to be convinced that this word was worth following and worth applying to their life so that they could have eternal life with Christ Jesus with eternal glory.

And rather than get into a theological conversation that no one has ever solved in 2000 years, I just make the point for each and every one of us. There's a place that we've been put in this amazing dynamic of God choosing people, calling people, saving people, and he puts us in the midst of it whether you're a pastor, children's church leader or a parent teaching your children. We are living for something greater than ourselves. Christian, we are living for something so much greater than ourselves. We are living as these vessels of God before people, the elect, that they may obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus with eternal glory.

Paul endured. All things

Last week we talked that a soldier needs to be deployable. Soldiers deploy. They go where the battle is. They go where the king wants to wage a war, take a land, set captives free. We don't have to quit our jobs. Some may because what God would ask. But for most God deploys us to where we are. And I think we can miss that, that we're soldiers in the workplace. We're soldiers, as dads fighting for our marriages and our children who are soldiers there on the school campus. This world is not our home. We wait for a city whose builder and maker is God. And it's surely not this world.

One of the greatest pictures of deployable soldiers is found in Ezra, the Babylonian captivity has come to the end as God deemed it. 70 years for not given Sabbath rest to the land. And the option is given for the children of Israel to return to the land, which many of them won't they'll stay in their comfort in Babylon, even though it's not the Homeland that they've been promised. But they built homes, they opened up businesses and they found themselves in comfort. But there will be a group who will sense and feel the calling of God. And they will return to the land that God has promised them. And it will be led by a man, his name will be Zerubbabel. His name in the Babylonian name means joy in affliction. And he will lead them, this group to rebuild the broken down walls, to reclaim the city of God, whose name is upon that city. But above all, to rebuild the temple of God.

Here, we see a man and we see a people fully deployable. To go where God would call them to go to do a work for the glory of God.

In Ezra 2, we see bunch of names. We see a bunch of lineages. We see a bunch of numbers and we can read through it and think it's ad nauseam some account, but it's more than that. Ezra 2 speaks of the promise that the children of Israel would come back in into their home. They would reclaim the land. That their exile and their defeat was not permanent. But it was a discipline and

the judgment they brought upon themselves. But God promised He would bring them back. And here we see in Ezra 2, a recording of God's faithfulness of everyone that came back, as He said that they would. Because He's compassionate, He's unfailing, He's full of faith. That's what faithfulness means full of faith. And here I can find myself putting so much on myself. But I can just come and rest in God's grace and the promise of his word that can't be chained and the faithfulness of it. I just need to get to him. He who is faithful, who promises me that He cannot deny himself and himself is his word. Therefore, He can't deny the word that He promises me. God is faithful. And He proves it in every sunrise. It's a picture that the sun will rise and that his mercies are new every morning. And great is his faithfulness to us because of a faithful God.

*Ezra 2:1-42 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> Now these are the people of the province who came back from the captivity, of those who had been carried away, whom Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon had carried away to Babylon, and who returned to Jerusalem and Judah, everyone to his own city. <sup>2</sup> Those who came with Zerubbabel were Jeshua, Nehemiah, Seraiah, Reelaiah, Mordecai, Bilshan, Mispar, Bigvai, Rehum, and Baanah. The number of the men of the people of Israel: <sup>3</sup> the people of Parosh, two thousand one hundred and seventy-two; <sup>4</sup> the people of Shephatiah, three hundred and seventy-two; <sup>5</sup> the people of Arah, seven hundred and seventy-five; <sup>6</sup> the people of Pahath-Moab, of the people of Jeshua and Joab, two thousand eight hundred and twelve; <sup>7</sup> the people of Elam, one thousand two hundred and fifty-four; <sup>8</sup> the people of Zattu, nine hundred and forty-five; <sup>9</sup> the people of Zaccai, seven hundred and sixty; <sup>10</sup> the people of Bani, six hundred and forty-two; <sup>11</sup> the people of Bebai, six hundred and twenty-three; <sup>12</sup> the people of Azgad, one thousand two hundred and twenty-two; <sup>13</sup> the people of Adonikam, six hundred and sixty-six; <sup>14</sup> the people of Bigvai, two thousand and fifty-six; <sup>15</sup> the people of Adin, four hundred and fifty-four; <sup>16</sup> the people of Ater of Hezekiah, ninety-eight; <sup>17</sup> the people of Bezai, three hundred and twenty-three; <sup>18</sup> the people of Jorah, one hundred and twelve; <sup>19</sup> the people of Hashum, two hundred and twenty-three; <sup>20</sup> the people of Gibbar, ninety-five; <sup>21</sup> the people of Bethlehem, one hundred and twenty-three; <sup>22</sup> the men of Netophah, fifty-six; <sup>23</sup> the men of Anathoth, one hundred and twenty-eight; <sup>24</sup> the people of Azmaveth, forty-two; <sup>25</sup> the people of Kirjath Arim, Chephirah, and Beeroth, seven hundred and forty-three; <sup>26</sup> the people of Ramah and Geba, six hundred and twenty-one; <sup>27</sup> the men of Michmas, one hundred and twenty-two; <sup>28</sup> the men of Bethel and Ai, two hundred and twenty-three; <sup>29</sup> the people of Nebo, fifty-two; <sup>30</sup> the people of Magbish, one hundred and fifty-six; <sup>31</sup> the people of the other Elam, one thousand two hundred and fifty-four; <sup>32</sup> the people of Harim, three hundred and twenty; <sup>33</sup> the people of Lod, Hadid, and Ono, seven hundred and twenty-five; <sup>34</sup> the people of Jericho, three hundred and forty-five; <sup>35</sup> the people of Senaah, three thousand six hundred and thirty. <sup>36</sup> The priests: the sons of Jedaiah, of the house of Jeshua, nine hundred and seventy-three; <sup>37</sup> the sons of Immer, one thousand and fifty-two; <sup>38</sup> the sons of Pashhur, one thousand two hundred and forty-seven; <sup>39</sup> the sons of Harim, one thousand and seventeen. <sup>40</sup> The Levites: the sons of Jeshua and Kadmiel, of the sons of Hodaviah, seventy-four. <sup>41</sup> The singers: the sons of Asaph, one hundred and twenty-eight. <sup>42</sup> The sons of the gatekeepers: the sons of Shallum, the sons of Ater, the sons of Talmon, the sons of Akkub, the sons of Hatita, and the sons of Shobai, one hundred and thirty-nine in all.

*Ezra 2:64 (NKJV)* <sup>64</sup> The whole assembly together was forty-two thousand three hundred and sixty.

*Lamentations 3:22-26 (NKJV)* <sup>22</sup> Through the LORD's mercies we are not consumed, Because His compassions fail not. <sup>23</sup> They are new every morning; Great is Your faithfulness. <sup>24</sup> "The LORD is my portion," says my soul, "Therefore I hope in Him!" <sup>25</sup> The LORD is good to those who wait for Him, To the soul who seeks Him. <sup>26</sup> It is good that one should hope and wait quietly For the salvation of the LORD.

When the children of Israel were in captive in Babylon. There was absolutely nothing that they did, nothing that they could do to take that land back Jerusalem, Israel. They were slaves, they were assimilated into Babylon. They were not free men. They were not free to leave Babylon at their choosing. They could only go because the king of Babylon and now Persia would let them go. It was nothing in and of themselves. The only reason they were able to return was because God's faithful word said that they would.

But notice here in Ezra 2, they left Babylon from their comfort of their homes. They built the businesses, established friendships and relationships to deploy into something that was part of something bigger. To go back into something that was harder, yet greater in reward and let it be noted. God counted every last one of them, He sees it.

God counts every person who will not deny his name, verse 13. Don't you ever forget that. He cannot deny Himself, because He cannot deny His Word, because He is the Word, and we can be strong and find grace in that.

*2 Timothy 2:13 (NKJV)* <sup>13</sup> If we are faithless, He remains faithful; He cannot deny Himself.

*(2 Timothy 2:1 NKJV)* You therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.

*John 1:14 (NKJV)* <sup>14</sup> And the Word became flesh and dwelt among us, and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth.

Zerubbabel would lead them in power. And like grace, it wasn't in his might of his army because he had none. It wasn't in the power of his organizational skills. It was simply in the grace of God, his Zechariah 4:6 by might nor by power. But by thy spirit saith the Lord to Zerubbabel.

*Zechariah 4:6 (NKJV) <sup>6</sup> So he answered and said to me: "This is the word of the LORD to Zerubbabel: 'Not by might nor by power, but by My Spirit,' Says the LORD of hosts.*

And may I just note, if you ever feel forgotten, outnumbered, lost, far away. Come back to Ezra 2, read it by name, read it by number, mark the name, mark the number because you'll see God's faithfulness. And you know we often say in Christianity, we're not just a number. And that's true in a sense as the world looks at people, you're just a name and a number you're not personal and precious. But actually you are numbered with the Lord. You're one that is numbered. As he numbers you as his own. I see you, says the father. Let the people know Ezra. I saw every last one of them. I counted them. They're numbered in my sight, and they are precious in my sight.

Peter says we are his own special people, a holy nation, a special treasure unto the Lord.

*1 Peter 2:9-10 (NKJV) <sup>9</sup> But you are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, His own special people, that you may proclaim the praises of Him who called you out of darkness into His marvelous light; <sup>10</sup> who once were not a people but are now the people of God, who had not obtained mercy but now have obtained mercy.*

**(2 Timothy 2:11 NKJV) This is a faithful saying: For if we died with Him, We shall also live with Him.**

Verse 11 in John 14, Jesus says that he goes to prepare a place for us, that where he is there we shall be. It's all based on the power of the resurrection, which was all based on the grace of God who gave his own begotten son that whoever should believe in him shall not perish, but have everlasting life.

*John 14:1-6 (NKJV) <sup>1</sup> "Let not your heart be troubled; you believe in God, believe also in Me. <sup>2</sup> In My Father's house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. <sup>3</sup> And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to Myself; that where I am, there you may be also. <sup>4</sup> And where I go you know, and the way you know." <sup>5</sup> Thomas said to Him, "Lord, we do not know where You are going, and how can we know the way?" <sup>6</sup> Jesus said to him, "I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me.*

*John 3:16 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life.*

**(2 Timothy 2:12 NKJV) If we endure, We shall also reign with Him. If we deny Him, He also will deny us.**

Verse 12. If we endure, we shall also reign with him. This is the promise of you've been faithful with the little things, I'll make you ruler over many. What we do here now for the kingdom, what we do here now for the king and the captain of our salvation will determine what we do in the millennial kingdom when that time is established here on earth. So there is an investment in the eternal things that will reap dividends for 1,000 years. And hence the word that came from verse 4, entangling ourselves with the affairs of this life for the shortness of it, the 120 years, if we would be so blessed to live that long, is still a blank compared to the millennial kingdom, the 1,000 years, and what we'll be doing for him.

*Luke 19:15-19 (NKJV) <sup>15</sup> "And so it was that when he returned, having received the kingdom, he then commanded these servants, to whom he had given the money, to be called to him, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading. <sup>16</sup> Then came the first, saying, 'Master, your mina has earned ten minas.' <sup>17</sup> And he said to him, 'Well done, good servant; because you were faithful in a very little, have authority over ten cities.' <sup>18</sup> And the second came, saying, 'Master, your mina has earned five minas.' <sup>19</sup> Likewise he said to him, 'You also be over five cities.'*

*Revelation 20:4-6 (NKJV) <sup>4</sup> And I saw thrones, and they sat on them, and judgment was committed to them. Then I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for their witness to Jesus and for the word of God, who had not worshiped the beast or his image, and had not received his mark on their foreheads or on their hands. And they lived and reigned with Christ for a thousand years. <sup>5</sup> But the rest of the dead did not live again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. <sup>6</sup> Blessed and holy is he who has part in the first resurrection. Over such the second death has no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years.*

If we endure

In Psalm 27, verse 14, it says, wait upon the Lord, be of good courage and He shall strengthen your heart. Wait I say on the Lord. And as we have studied the strength and the courage is verse one of chapter two, here. We're to be strong in the grace. Courage and strength are nearly inseparable. And we find our courage and we find strength in resting on the grace of the Lord. Unmerited favor because He's faithful, compassionate, and we can rest in that.

*Psalm 27:13–14 (NKJV)* <sup>13</sup> *I would have lost heart, unless I had believed That I would see the goodness of the LORD In the land of the living.* <sup>14</sup> *Wait on the LORD; Be of good courage, And He shall strengthen your heart; Wait, I say, on the LORD!*

*2 Timothy 2:1 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> *You therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.*

Verse 12. If we deny him, He also denies us. I do not believe that this is something that contradicts verse 13 about if we are faithless, He remains faithful. I believe it's a diagnostic indicator of where our heart truly is if we are enduring and living and reigning with him, or if we just think that we are. In Matthew 10:32 and 33, Jesus would say, "If you confess me before men, I will confess you before my father in heaven. If you deny me before men, I will deny you before my father in heaven." That's the words in red of Jesus Christ. And I believe it's a diagnostic word of where the heart really is when we get challenged with our faith, with standing with Jesus, with standing with his word, with standing with the profession of our faith.

*Matthew 10:32–39 (NKJV)* <sup>32</sup> *“Therefore whoever confesses Me before men, him I will also confess before My Father who is in heaven.* <sup>33</sup> *But whoever denies Me before men, him I will also deny before My Father who is in heaven.* <sup>34</sup> *“Do not think that I came to bring peace on earth. I did not come to bring peace but a sword.* <sup>35</sup> *For I have come to ‘set a man against his father, a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law’;* <sup>36</sup> *and ‘a man’s enemies will be those of his own household.’* <sup>37</sup> *He who loves father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me. And he who loves son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me.* <sup>38</sup> *And he who does not take his cross and follow after Me is not worthy of Me.* <sup>39</sup> *He who finds his life will lose it, and he who loses his life for My sake will find it.*

If we find ourselves in a place we deny him, we should do some introspect evaluation of our heart and ask ourselves, just where do we stand with the Lord. When He's not popular, do we stand with him, or do we only stand with him on Sunday when He is popular?

Richard Wurmbrand, who spent 14 years in a brutal Romanian prison, said, “there were two kinds of Christians: those who sincerely believe in God and those who, just as sincerely, believe that they believe. You can tell them apart by their actions in decisive moments.”

\* — *Richard Wurmbrand, In God's Underground*

**(2 Timothy 2:13 NKJV) If we are faithless, He remains faithful; He cannot deny Himself.**

Verse 13. If we are faithless, He remains faithful. He cannot deny himself. And there it is again, where we started, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. It's grace. It's all grace. And we can live in the strength of this grace. If we are faithless, He remains faithful. He cannot deny himself.

Christian may we never interpret any words of God apart from him who speaks them. They must all be in the light of him and his nature and his attributes of love and grace and mercy. We're to take his words as if we are standing face to face with him and He is speaking them, because truly that is what is happening. As the word of God be, is living and powerful. It's a living God speaking to us and He is speaking his heart to us. He speaks promises. He speaks power. He speaks warning. He speaks discipline. But in all of his words, He speaks them for our good. Because He is a good, good father. Amen.

**God will always be faithful**

God will always be faithful, for He can't deny Himself. I go off, moved away, I miss the blessing, but when I return, the blessing will flow.

**Old Faithful**

*You travel with me halfway across the country to Yellowstone National Park. There we are, standing by the fence waiting for Old Faithful to erupt—as it does every 92 minutes. But after about 30 minutes, you become bored and you see a*

goose which you follow into the woods. I remain by the fence and see the spectacle of Old Faithful's geyser. You, on the other hand, miss out because you're on a wild goose chase. Finally you say, 'This is dumb. I'm going back to position myself close to Old Faithful again.'

Now, when Old Faithful sees you coming, it doesn't say, 'Well, well, well. Look who's finally decided to show up. There's no way I will erupt for you. You've been on a wild goose chase.' No, Old Faithful erupts regularly, faithfully, no matter where you are or aren't.

Paul is saying that God is, in the best sense of the word, Old Faithful, because His blessings are continually flowing. If I go off on a wild goose chase, I won't be blessed—not because the blessings aren't there, but because I've moved away. But once I realize I'm in the woods on some crazy excursion and return to the geyser of the goodness of God's grace, I find that God is faithful still.

For years, I thought God had to be primed—through praise, prayer, and devotion. And I thought if I could just pump the handle of His blessings hard enough, blessing would start coming my way. But then I realized His grace is there any time I choose to come back to my senses and come back to Him.

God cannot deny Himself, gang. He's not faithful one day, and frustrated the next. He's not generous one day, but stingy the next. He is continually and completely faithful. (Courson)

### **God is not Moody / Prodigal Son**

This is grace Timothy, it is all grace. God is not moody, guarantee anytime you want to come back and say here I am, He is ready to receive you and bless you. If you've been away it doesn't take a week or month before the blessings will flow, they will come immediately, so come back immediately. The Prodigal Son, the moment He came home, dad ran to him, and the celebration began. Don't ever wait, He is Faithful.

### **Prayer**

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

### **In Every Study**

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

Passage: 2 Timothy 2:14-26

Title: The Approved Worker of God

Summary: In our text today, the Lord tells us what His “approved”, accepted, proven worker does and is. They are like a skilled surgeon, a vessel of honor, and a rescuer of the captive. Join us as we study to show ourselves “approved” a worker who need not be ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of God.

*2 Timothy 2:14–26 (NKJV) <sup>14</sup> Remind them of these things, charging them before the Lord not to strive about words to no profit, to the ruin of the hearers. <sup>15</sup> Be diligent to present yourself approved to God, a worker who does not need to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. <sup>16</sup> But shun profane and idle babblings, for they will increase to more ungodliness. <sup>17</sup> And their message will spread like cancer. Hymenaeus and Philetus are of this sort, <sup>18</sup> who have strayed concerning the truth, saying that the resurrection is already past; and they overthrow the faith of some. <sup>19</sup> Nevertheless the solid foundation of God stands, having this seal: “The Lord knows those who are His,” and, “Let everyone who names the name of Christ depart from iniquity.” <sup>20</sup> But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold and silver, but also of wood and clay, some for honor and some for dishonor. <sup>21</sup> Therefore if anyone cleanses himself from the latter, he will be a vessel for honor, sanctified and useful for the Master, prepared for every good work. <sup>22</sup> Flee also youthful lusts; but pursue righteousness, faith, love, peace with those who call on the Lord out of a pure heart. <sup>23</sup> But avoid foolish and ignorant disputes, knowing that they generate strife. <sup>24</sup> And a servant of the Lord must not quarrel but be gentle to all, able to teach, patient, <sup>25</sup> in humility correcting those who are in opposition, if God perhaps will grant them repentance, so that they may know the truth, <sup>26</sup> and that they may come to their senses and escape the snare of the devil, having been taken captive by him to do his will.*

In verse 14, the Greek word for approved is “dokimos”; In the ancient world there was no banking system as we know it today, and no paper money. All money was made from metal (precious metals such as gold, silver, copper, or brass – metals that a worth to them), heated until liquid, poured into moulds and allowed to cool. When the coins were cooled, it was necessary to smooth off the uneven edges. The coins were comparatively soft and of course many people shaved them closely. In one century, more than eighty laws were passed in Athens, to stop the practice of shaving down the coins then in circulation. But some money changers were men of integrity, who would accept no counterfeit money. They were men of honour who put only genuine full weighted money into circulation. Such men were called “dokimos” or “approved”.

Outline: The Approved Worker of God (2 Timothy 2:14-26)

1) The Approved Worker of God

- Is a Skilled Surgeon; By Rightly Dividing the Word of God (2:14-18)

2) The Approved Worker of God

- Is a Vessel of Honor; By being Useful for the Master (2:19-21)

3) The Approved Worker of God

- Is a Rescuer to Those who are Captive; By Speaking the Truth that Sets Captives Free (2:22-26)

### Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

### In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

## 1) The Approved Worker of God

- **Is a Skilled Surgeon; By Rightly Dividing the Word of God (2:14-18)**

*2 Timothy 2:14–18 (NKJV)* <sup>14</sup> Remind them of these things, charging them before the Lord not to strive about words to no profit, to the ruin of the hearers. <sup>15</sup> Be diligent to present yourself approved to God, a worker who does not need to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. <sup>16</sup> But shun profane and idle babblings, for they will increase to more ungodliness. <sup>17</sup> And their message will spread like cancer. Hymenaeus and Philetus are of this sort, <sup>18</sup> who have strayed concerning the truth, saying that the resurrection is already past; and they overthrow the faith of some.

**(2 Timothy 2:14 NKJV) Remind them of these things, charging them before the Lord not to strive about words to no profit, to the ruin of the hearers.**

**(2 Timothy 2:15 NKJV) Be diligent to present yourself approved to God, a worker who does not need to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.**

Again, in verse 14, the Greek word for approved is “dokimos”; In the ancient world there was no banking system as we know it today, and no paper money. All money was made from metal (precious metals such as gold, silver, copper, or brass – metals that a worth to them), heated until liquid, poured into moulds and allowed to cool. When the coins were cooled, it was necessary to smooth off the uneven edges. The coins were comparatively soft and of course many people shaved them closely. In one century, more than eighty laws were passed in Athens, to stop the practice of shaving down the coins then in circulation. But some money changers were men of integrity, who would accept no counterfeit money. They were men of honour who put only genuine full weighted money into circulation. Such men were called “dokimos” or “approved”.

I like the OKJV of verse 15 the best

*2 Timothy 2:15 (KJV 1900)* <sup>15</sup> Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.

V.15 – Study, means to be diligent, to be eager, to be zealous to make every effort, to do your utmost, to exert oneself, to labor. So we see the calling of studying, as we see the illustration of being a farmer, an athlete, a soldier – and the discipline and labor it requires to be victories and bring a harvest.

Rightly divide means to cut a straight line, precision, like a farmer plowing a straight line, like a carpenter cutting a board straight, and like a skilled surgeon with his scalpel.

The cutting is to know God’s Word, so we can see what is not God’s Word (will and way). To take God’s word and cut against all the winds and words and babble of the world, and come to just pure meat of the word.

Like the soldier, the athlete, and the farmer – these men took no shortcuts, they never “shaved” the word down, they “studied” to know the Word, what it meant, what God was meaning behind it, so they could live it and give it! Christian..... lets LIVE IT AND GIVE IT, the Word of God!

*2 Timothy 2:3–7 (NKJV)* <sup>3</sup> You therefore must endure hardship as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. <sup>4</sup> No one engaged in warfare entangles himself with the affairs of this life, that he may please him who enlisted him as a soldier. <sup>5</sup> And also if anyone competes in athletics, he is not crowned unless he competes according to the rules. <sup>6</sup> The hardworking farmer must be first to partake of the crops. <sup>7</sup> Consider what I say, and may the Lord give you understanding in all things.

Last study we talked about Ezra and him leading a group of people back from Babylon to help rebuild, replenish, the Temple of God in Jerusalem that laid in ruin after the Babylonians destroyed some 70 years earlier. Now notice this, Ezra was a ready, or skilled, scribe.

*Ezra 7:6 (NKJV)* <sup>6</sup> this Ezra came up from Babylon; and he was a skilled scribe in the Law of Moses, which the LORD God of Israel had given. The king granted him all his request, according to the hand of the LORD his God upon him.

To us a scribe sounds like a glorified secretary, someone who simply writes. That is not the idea of this description of Ezra. For the Jewish culture of that day, a skilled scribe was an expert in the Law of Moses, someone who was like a highly trained lawyer in the word of God. (Guzik)

When did he get ready? When he was in captivity in Babylon. He could have pouted. He could have been angry he was not in a greater position of importance. But instead of pouting, he prepared. Even if you're in a place of captivity, even if you feel like you're boxed in, don't pout. Prepare. Study. Pray. Seek the Lord. In due time, at the right time, the Lord will release you for those tasks He has prepared for you. Ezra spent years preparing. Then the Lord tapped him on the shoulder to lead another group out of captivity and back to the Land of Promise (Courson)

And notice this, as we speak of soldiers deployable and disciplined, as well as athletes and farmers and the discipline it takes to win and bring in a harvest:

*2 Timothy 2:3-7 (NKJV)* <sup>3</sup> You therefore must endure hardship as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. <sup>4</sup> No one engaged in warfare entangles himself with the affairs of this life, that he may please him who enlisted him as a soldier. <sup>5</sup> And also if anyone competes in athletics, he is not crowned unless he competes according to the rules. <sup>6</sup> The hardworking farmer must be first to partake of the crops. <sup>7</sup> Consider what I say, and may the Lord give you understanding in all things.

Ezra, went the distance, literally, and was willing to go to whatever length it took to serve His God, and may we remember his example as we study the rest of our passage today as we speak of being vessels of honor and rescuers of the captives.

*Ezra 7:8-9 (NKJV)* <sup>8</sup> And Ezra came to Jerusalem in the fifth month, which was in the seventh year of the king. <sup>9</sup> On the first day of the first month he began his journey from Babylon, and on the first day of the fifth month he came to Jerusalem, according to the good hand of his God upon him.

“Though the direct distance between Babylon and Jerusalem is about five hundred miles, the travelers would have had to traverse nine hundred miles, going northwest along the Euphrates River and then south.” (Yamauchi)

So Christian, how far would you go to be an approved worker for the Lord? Ezra went 900 miles over 4 months, that is like only being able to go 8 miles a day, and so if you hike for 8 hours that is still only 1 mile an hour, that is a laborious hike. Who would join me to start walking to Florida today, as that is about 800 miles from here in Maryland?

**(2 Timothy 2:16 NKJV) But shun profane and idle babblings, for they will increase to more ungodliness.**

**(2 Timothy 2:17 NKJV) And their message will spread like cancer. Hymenaeus and Philetus are of this sort,**

**(2 Timothy 2:18 NKJV) who have strayed concerning the truth, saying that the resurrection is already past; and they overthrow the faith of some.**

Hymenaeus and Philetus were saying, “There is no real resurrection. Forget the Rapture. It’s all symbolic and not to be taken literally.” They claimed to be insightful, but because of their vain discussion of these things, the faith of some was hurt badly. I think they are saying no resurrection in the sense that the body doesn’t resurrect, just the spirit, and thus what you do in the body doesn’t matter and therefore. It was called “gnosticism” and was very prevalent in the time of this writing. Basically, it was an excuse they made up to indulge in the flesh and try to not feel guilty about it. Today we see a picture of it in Catholicism where you could buy indulgences in the medieval times, and today you pay for a mass for a loved one to help buy them out of purgatory. All of it totally unscriptural and heretical.

Cancer spreads — or metastasizes — when cancer cells break away from the original tumor and travel through your bloodstream or lymphatic system to other parts of your body.

The approved worker of God must be like a skilled surgeon, and removing invasive cancer from ourselves, the church, and others before it can spread and destroy.

## **2) The Approved Worker of God**

- **Is a Vessel of Honor; By being Useful for the Master (2:19-21)**

*2 Timothy 2:19-21 (NKJV)* <sup>19</sup> Nevertheless the solid foundation of God stands, having this seal: “The Lord knows those who are His,” and, “Let everyone who names the name of Christ depart from iniquity.” <sup>20</sup> But in a great house there are not only vessels of

gold and silver, but also of wood and clay, some for honor and some for dishonor. <sup>21</sup> Therefore if anyone cleanses himself from the latter, he will be a vessel for honor, sanctified and useful for the Master, prepared for every good work.

**(2 Timothy 2:19 NKJV) Nevertheless the solid foundation of God stands, having this seal: "The Lord knows those who are His," and, "Let everyone who names the name of Christ depart from iniquity."**

Quoting from Numbers 16,

*Numbers 16:1–5 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> Now Korah the son of Izhar, the son of Kohath, the son of Levi, with Dathan and Abiram the sons of Eliab, and On the son of Peleth, sons of Reuben, took men; <sup>2</sup> and they rose up before Moses with some of the children of Israel, two hundred and fifty leaders of the congregation, representatives of the congregation, men of renown. <sup>3</sup> They gathered together against Moses and Aaron, and said to them, "You take too much upon yourselves, for all the congregation is holy, every one of them, and the LORD is among them. Why then do you exalt yourselves above the assembly of the LORD?" <sup>4</sup> So when Moses heard it, he fell on his face; <sup>5</sup> and he spoke to Korah and all his company, saying, "Tomorrow morning the LORD will show who is His and who is holy, and will cause him to come near to Him. That one whom He chooses He will cause to come near to Him.

*Numbers 16:25–27 (NKJV)* <sup>25</sup> Then Moses rose and went to Dathan and Abiram, and the elders of Israel followed him. <sup>26</sup> And he spoke to the congregation, saying, "Depart now from the tents of these wicked men! Touch nothing of theirs, lest you be consumed in all their sins." <sup>27</sup> So they got away from around the tents of Korah, Dathan, and Abiram; and Dathan and Abiram came out and stood at the door of their tents, with their wives, their sons, and their little children.

*Numbers 16:31–35 (NKJV)* <sup>31</sup> Now it came to pass, as he finished speaking all these words, that the ground split apart under them, <sup>32</sup> and the earth opened its mouth and swallowed them up, with their households and all the men with Korah, with all their goods. <sup>33</sup> So they and all those with them went down alive into the pit; the earth closed over them, and they perished from among the assembly. <sup>34</sup> Then all Israel who were around them fled at their cry, for they said, "Lest the earth swallow us up also!" <sup>35</sup> And a fire came out from the LORD and consumed the two hundred and fifty men who were offering incense.

Paul says, "Even though there are men Hymenaeus and Philetus) causing problems with their erroneous teaching, the Lord will keep those that are truly His." Numbers 16 is indeed an appropriate parallel....

"Who gave you the right to rule over us?" Korah, Dathan, and Abiram asked Moses.

And Moses wisely responded by saying to the two hundred fifty men with them, "If I were you, I would depart from them. They're causing division. They're a big problem. Stay away."

But Moses' warning went unheeded. So the earth swallowed them all (Numbers 16:32).

If you want to find yourself swallowed up by despair or confusion, hang around those who cause problems. I have yet to see a man or a woman prosper who causes division and problems in a church.

And the calling to depart from iniquity (sin); lets look at verses 20-21, as we have the calling to be vessels of honor, pure, so we can be useful and used by the Master.

**(2 Timothy 2:20 NKJV) But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold and silver, but also of wood and clay, some for honor and some for dishonor.**

**(2 Timothy 2:21 NKJV) Therefore if anyone cleanses himself from the latter, he will be a vessel for honor, sanctified and useful for the Master, prepared for every good work.**

I simply love that phrase, "useful for the Master", oh it just warms my heart, moves my heart, "the Master", oh to be used and useful for the Master! Here I am Lord, send me as Isaiah said!

*Isaiah 6:8 (NKJV)* <sup>8</sup> Also I heard the voice of the Lord, saying: "Whom shall I send, And who will go for Us?" Then I said, "Here am I! Send me."

Back to Ezra, read this with me:

*Ezra 6:1–5 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> Then King Darius issued a decree, and a search was made in the archives, where the treasures were stored in Babylon. <sup>2</sup> And at Achmetha, in the palace that is in the province of Media, a scroll was found, and in it a record was written thus: <sup>3</sup> In the first year of King Cyrus, King Cyrus issued a decree concerning the house of God at Jerusalem: "Let the house be rebuilt, the place where they offered sacrifices; and let the foundations of it be firmly laid, its height sixty cubits and its width sixty cubits, <sup>4</sup> with three rows of heavy stones and one row of new timber. Let the expenses be paid from the king's treasury. <sup>5</sup> Also let the gold and silver articles of the house of God, which Nebuchadnezzar took from the temple which is in Jerusalem and brought to Babylon, be restored and taken back to the temple which is in Jerusalem, each to its place; and deposit them in the house of God"—

*Ezra 7:12–17 (NKJV)* <sup>12</sup> Artaxerxes, king of kings, To Ezra the priest, a scribe of the Law of the God of heaven: Perfect peace, and so forth. <sup>13</sup> I issue a decree that all those of the people of Israel and the priests and Levites in my realm, who volunteer to go up to Jerusalem, may go with you. <sup>14</sup> And whereas you are being sent by the king and his seven counselors to inquire concerning Judah and Jerusalem, with regard to the Law of your God which is in your hand; <sup>15</sup> and whereas you are to carry the silver and gold which the king and his counselors have freely offered to the God of Israel, whose dwelling is in Jerusalem; <sup>16</sup> and whereas all the silver and gold that you may find in all the province of Babylon, along with the freewill offering of the people and the priests, are to be freely offered for the house of their God in Jerusalem—<sup>17</sup> now therefore, be careful to buy with this money bulls, rams, and lambs, with their grain offerings and their drink offerings, and offer them on the altar of the house of your God in Jerusalem.

Like Zerubbabel (Ezra 6 – first group to return), and Ezra (Ezra 7 – the second group to return), they were all carrying treasures with them, back to Jerusalem, and very specifically the Temple, the articles for the Temple.

Christian, listen why you are so amazing, because you are a “Treasure Carrier”:

*1 Corinthians 3:16–17 (NKJV)* <sup>16</sup> Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you? <sup>17</sup> If anyone defiles the temple of God, God will destroy him. For the temple of God is holy, which temple you are.

Remind you, the theme of the epistle and what we are called to do, hold fast:

*2 Timothy 1:13–14 (NKJV)* <sup>13</sup> Hold fast the pattern of sound words which you have heard from me, in faith and love which are in Christ Jesus. <sup>14</sup> That good thing which was committed to you, keep by the Holy Spirit who dwells in us.

It is not about the vessel, but what the vessel carries, and you carry the Treasure, God in you!

*Colossians 1:27–29 (NKJV)* <sup>27</sup> To them God willed to make known what are the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles: which is Christ in you, the hope of glory. <sup>28</sup> Him we preach, warning every man and teaching every man in all wisdom, that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus. <sup>29</sup> To this end I also labor, striving according to His working which works in me mightily.

Do you realize what this truly means to us? Our lives are supernatural. Our lives are spiritual, because God who is Spirit lives in us and desires to use us for His glory. As Treasure carriers, we need to remember anything can happen at any given moment, because of Who we Carry.

From “Lessons from the Hunt”

Pastor Ray here with another lesson from the hunt. Went out this morning, a little after day break, and two does jumped me. "Wait a minute," you hunters say. "You mean you jumped two does." No, two does jumped me, in that they totally surprised me. I didn't see them coming. Wasn't expecting them at all. And basically what happened was, as I was walking in from my truck to where I would put up my stand, it's about a half a mile walk and it's along a gravel road. And then I break off about a half mile later and then start cutting into the woods.

And I had my bow in hand, had my tree climber on my back. I had my quick release strapped in on my trigger finger because I said you never know what might happen. But obviously, even as I say you never know what might happen, it happened and I was totally unprepared for it. I just caught a glimpse, right as I was beginning to go around a bend down a hill, I saw the white tail. That's all I saw in the bush, heading into the bush was the white tail.

So then I positioned and got ready with the hope that there was a second behind that one, but after 30 seconds, nothing. So I made my way quietly and slowly to the brim of the hill and looked down the hill, hoping that maybe that doe or two would've been just there, 10, 20 yards down the hill, meaning that the doe didn't see me and that I was going to get the jump on the doe. But as I came up to the little tip of the brim of the hill, there was nothing at 20 yards, 30 or 40. And then finally around 50 or 60 yards out, I see one doe running and then right behind it, six feet, was doe number two, practicing social distancing, obviously.

And it all told me the story that they had saw me, they had knew that I was there, and they were on the move. And the point that I make is even though I said be ready, I truly wasn't. Because in my mind, truly the shot wasn't going to happen except back at where I had determined was a pinch point and the best place to set up the tree stand to hopefully oversee the hill that they would be coming down. And so my mind was getting to the tree, even though I said be ready for anything.

And you know, the funny thing about it is it's so much like that in our spiritual life, because literally the split second before I saw that white tail going into the bush, I had said to myself, or the Lord had spoken to me, be spiritual, make this a spiritual time, redeem the time for the days are evil (Ephesians 5:16). Be ready to just sit with the Lord and speak with him, pray with him, have a time with him. I have a little wrist strap that flips open. It's camouflaged, but it flips open. And it holds two 4 by 6 index cards. And I write scriptures or prayer points on it, or sermon outlines, whatever they may be, to sit and pray and to ponder and just spend time in the stand, enjoying the glorious outdoors, and enjoying the excitement of the hunt, and above all to spend time with the Lord to hear what he might say to me.

So it is ever so fitting in that I said, or the Lord spoke, make this spiritual. Let the things of the spirit arise and enjoy it. And the two points that I tie in from the lesson from the hunt, just as in spirituality, same with the hunt. We can think the

spirituality, the spiritual things are only going to happen at certain places, at certain times, as we see it to be, just like the deer hunt. Certain place, certain time, as we see it to be. That's the location, that's the place that I'll get my shot.

And we can do the same where we say in our spiritual walk, the spiritual things only going to happen in my dedicated devotion time. The spiritual things only going to happen in my time at the church or in this men's group that I go to. And we just miss so often, I'm sure of it, just like the lesson from the hunt, that God's ready to do something spiritual anywhere, anytime, any place. And we just need to leave ourselves open to that of, "Lord, here I am. Everywhere I go today, if you want to break through and make it into a spiritual moment, if you want to break through and give me something, then Lord, I gladly receive that and I want to be ready for whatever you would have for me." And so the lesson from the hunt, I pray it blesses you.

### 3) The Approved Worker of God

- **Is a Rescuer to Those who are Captive; By Speaking the Truth that Sets Captives Free (2:22-26)**

*2 Timothy 2:22–26 (NKJV)* <sup>22</sup> Flee also youthful lusts; but pursue righteousness, faith, love, peace with those who call on the Lord out of a pure heart. <sup>23</sup> But avoid foolish and ignorant disputes, knowing that they generate strife. <sup>24</sup> And a servant of the Lord must not quarrel but be gentle to all, able to teach, patient, <sup>25</sup> in humility correcting those who are in opposition, if God perhaps will grant them repentance, so that they may know the truth, <sup>26</sup> and that they may come to their senses and escape the snare of the devil, having been taken captive by him to do his will.

**(2 Timothy 2:22 NKJV) Flee also youthful lusts; but pursue righteousness, faith, love, peace with those who call on the Lord out of a pure heart.**

For you youth, men or woman of any age; remember it is 2:22 am/pm twice a day, to remind us, stay pure before the Lord.

Joseph fled, David fed. Joseph took the thought captive and fled, but David fed the thought and was taken down.

*2 Corinthians 10:3–6 (NKJV)* <sup>3</sup> For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war according to the flesh. <sup>4</sup> For the weapons of our warfare *are* not carnal but mighty in God for pulling down strongholds, <sup>5</sup> casting down arguments and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, bringing every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ, <sup>6</sup> and being ready to punish all disobedience when your obedience is fulfilled.

*Genesis 39:11–12 (NKJV)* <sup>11</sup> But it happened about this time, when Joseph went into the house to do his work, and none of the men of the house *was* inside, <sup>12</sup> that she caught him by his garment, saying, "Lie with me." But he left his garment in her hand, and fled and ran outside.

*2 Samuel 11:2–3 (NKJV)* <sup>2</sup> Then it happened one evening that David arose from his bed and walked on the roof of the king's house. And from the roof he saw a woman bathing, and the woman *was* very beautiful to behold. <sup>3</sup> So David sent and inquired about the woman. And *someone* said, "Is this not Bathsheba, the daughter of Eliam, the wife of Uriah the Hittite?"

Hey, regardless of age, every person needs to stay on guard. Ask Job, he had 10 sons and daughters, but even at his middle age he tells us he had to stay on guard. If he didn't guard, he would have never said what he said.

*Job 31:1 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> "I have made a covenant with my eyes; Why then should I look upon a young woman?"

**(2 Timothy 2:23 NKJV) But avoid foolish and ignorant disputes, knowing that they generate strife.**

**(2 Timothy 2:24 NKJV) And a servant of the Lord must not quarrel but be gentle to all, able to teach, patient,**

**(2 Timothy 2:25 NKJV) in humility correcting those who are in opposition, if God perhaps will grant them repentance, so that they may know the truth,**

**(2 Timothy 2:26 NKJV) and that they may come to their senses and escape the snare of the devil, having been taken captive by him to do his will.**

Wasted debates, wasted time, instead of studying the Word of God and seeking what God says about the matter, Christian cruise the internet and news channels to hear what others say.

But we are to be a people, who don't get caught up in that stuff, but stay laser focused on the Word, for only it can cut through all the lies and deception of the world, the flesh, and the Devil and set people free. We are to rescue them, by throwing them the lifeline of the Word of God, that

we can only pray through the Holy Spirit (the Treasure in Us – therefore anything can happen), and prayerfully they will turn from sin and unto the Lord, as the Word rightly divides.

*Jude 20–23 (NKJV)* <sup>20</sup> But you, beloved, building yourselves up on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Spirit, <sup>21</sup> keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life. <sup>22</sup> And on some have compassion, making a distinction; <sup>23</sup> but others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire, hating even the garment defiled by the flesh.

*John 8:32 (NKJV)* <sup>32</sup> And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.”

*John 8:36 (NKJV)* <sup>36</sup> Therefore if the Son makes you free, you shall be free indeed.

*2 Timothy 2:15 (KJV 1900)* <sup>15</sup> Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV)* <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

So to recap:

#### Outline: The Approved Worker of God (2 Timothy 2:14-26)

##### 1) The Approved Worker of God

- Is a Skilled Surgeon; By Rightly Dividing the Word of God (2:14-18)

##### 2) The Approved Worker of God

- Is a Vessel of Honor; By being Useful for the Master (2:19-21)

##### 3) The Approved Worker of God

- Is a Rescuer to Those who are Captive; By Speaking the Truth that Sets Captives Free (2:22-26)

#### Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV)* <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

#### In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV)* <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

## Chapter 3

Passage: 2 Timothy 3:1-17

Title: Perilous Times, Perilous People, and a Prepared Church

Summary: Paul starts this next section of the epistle by saying in the original language, “be knowing, and keep on knowing, and be keeping this in your mind, that in the last days it will be perilous times filled with many perilous people, and the key to enduring is the continual learning and understanding of the Scriptures (from childhood through adulthood). Join us as we..... continue in the Scriptures.

*2 Timothy 3 (NKJV) <sup>1</sup> But know this, that in the last days perilous times will come: <sup>2</sup> For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, <sup>3</sup> unloving, unforgiving, slanderers, without self-control, brutal, despisers of good, <sup>4</sup> traitors, headstrong, haughty, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God, <sup>5</sup> having a form of godliness but denying its power. And from such people turn away! <sup>6</sup> For of this sort are those who creep into households and make captives of gullible women loaded down with sins, led away by various lusts, <sup>7</sup> always learning and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth. <sup>8</sup> Now as Jannes and Jambres resisted Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, disapproved concerning the faith; <sup>9</sup> but they will progress no further, for their folly will be manifest to all, as theirs also was. <sup>10</sup> But you have carefully followed my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, longsuffering, love, perseverance, <sup>11</sup> persecutions, afflictions, which happened to me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra—what persecutions I endured. And out of them all the Lord delivered me. <sup>12</sup> Yes, and all who desire to live godly in Christ Jesus will suffer persecution. <sup>13</sup> But evil men and impostors will grow worse and worse, deceiving and being deceived. <sup>14</sup> But you must continue in the things which you have learned and been assured of, knowing from whom you have learned them, <sup>15</sup> and that from childhood you have known the Holy Scriptures, which are able to make you wise for salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus. <sup>16</sup> All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, <sup>17</sup> that the man of God may be complete, thoroughly equipped for every good work.*

### Outline: Perilous Times, Perilous People, and a Prepared Church

1. Be Knowing: Perilous People Will Come in the Form of godliness (3:2-5)
2. Be Knowing: Perilous People Will Want to Creep in Households (3:6-7)
3. Be Knowing: Perilous People Will Be Made Known to the Church (3:8-9)
4. Be Knowing: Perilous People Will Come Against God’s People (3:10-12)
5. Be Knowing: Perilous People Will Be Defeated by The Word of God (3:13-17)

### Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

### In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

### **(2 Timothy 3:1 NKJV) But know this, that in the last days perilous times will come:**

In verse 1 Paul tells Timothy, God tells us,

*But know this,*

That in the last days perilous times will come. The words “know this” means “get knowledge about this, “this be knowing,” that is, “be keeping this in your mind” regarding the last-days.

### *Last Days*

The expression, "in the last days," refers to the time immediately preceding the Rapture of the Church and the second Advent of the Lord Jesus. "Times" is *kairos* (καιρος), which Trenchard defines as follows: "a critical, epoch-making period foreordained of God when all that has been slowly, and often without observation, ripening through long ages, is mature and comes to the birth in grand decisive events, which constitute at once the close of one period and the commencement of another."

*Wuest, K. S. (1997). Wuest's word studies from the Greek New Testament: for the English reader (Vol. 8, p. 143). Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.*

### *They will be perilous*

5467 χαλεπός [chalepos /khal-ep-os/] adj. Perhaps from 5465 through the idea of reducing the strength; GK 5901; Two occurrences; AV translates as "fierce" once, and "perilous" once. 1 hard to do, to take, to approach. 2 hard to bear, troublesome, dangerous. 2A harsh, fierce, savage.

\*Strong, J. (1995). *Enhanced Strong's Lexicon*. Woodside Bible Fellowship.

Paul says you must know that you know, you must get knowledge about this..... be knowing about this, know how to read the signs of the last days.

Paul gives us 18 words or phrases to describe the last days.

### **1 - Be Knowing: Perilous People Will Come in the Form of godliness (3:2-5)**

**(2 Timothy 3:2 NKJV) For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy,**

*For men will be lovers of themselves* - When the settlers came to America the first thing they would build together would be a town center that would serve as the church and community center, then they would build their houses. Today community and church are low on the list. First and foremost in this world is self, there is a huge self-occupation with self, as densely populated as this world has become, man has become isolated because of being so self-occupied.

*Lovers of money*, - Need money to love yourself lavishly

*boasters*, - as used in its time, an empty pretender. Says plenty but could never deliver. The word was used for the snake-oil salesman who would promise wonderful results, but well out of town before the results would kick-in.

*proud*, - to put themselves above others.

*blasphemers*, - Not just cursing but saying the Lord's name in vain. Saying the Lord's name as if it is something common, not saying it reverently. As we mentioned in the past studies when the Scribes would write the name of God, they would take a bath, change their clothes, get a new pen and fresh ink, and then write the name of God. Maybe we might consider that extreme, for God never asked them to do that, but God did say don't take my name in vain, it isn't common place. Today man throws it around never considering the whom of that name. The Big Man upstairs.

*disobedient to parents*, - the beginning of the lack of respect for authority, first and foremost the authority of God who says, children obey and honor your parents.

*unthankful*, - to be unthankful, is to be ungrateful, because what a person has is never enough.

*unholy*, - Means offender of all that is holy. Holy means to be set apart, to be uncommon,

**(2 Timothy 3:3 NKJV) unloving, unforgiving, slanderers, without self-control, brutal, despisers of good,**

unloving – of course can't love any one because of love of self.

unforgiving/trucebreakers – In the KJV it is translated “trucebreaker”. Today we see a contract is meaningless. Sports stars sign a five year contract then want to renegotiate 2 years later. Politicians make all their promises then break them once they make office. Fifty percent of the marriages in this country end in divorce. When I do marriage counseling I point out to the couple you are not making a contract with each other, you are making a covenant before God. You can go to the courthouse and get a contract, but when you see fit, some ink and money will break that. But you are making an eternal covenant with God to love cherish each other until death do you part, there is no court or lawyer who has the power to break it.

Slanderers – Talking behind others back to build themselves up, or further their cause. They are always so bold when they talk behind a persons back, but then put on a different face when they are in that persons presence.

without self-control, - Whatever it takes to satisfy myself, for I am a lover of myself. This is most applicable regarding sexual immorality, as a person only cares about self and not the other, they just use the person for their own sexual gratification.

brutal, - Murder and violence at an all-time high, domestic violence, rioting, abortion, and the list goes on.

despisers of good, - Means people who are intolerant of people who still have and speak out on moral values. Christians are the brunt of jokes, or smears because of our unwillingness to join or laugh along.

**(2 Timothy 3:4 NKJV) traitors, headstrong, haughty, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God,**

traitors, - Whatever it takes to please self. I am amazed how these people will sell weapons or secrets to evil countries, all for a buck, knowing that it will cause their very country to lose lives.

headstrong, - People not willing to accept that they are doing wrong, or violating God's will for their life. We've always seen this in the world, but now more and more inside the church. People refusing to repent, saying their way is right and your way is too narrow.

Haughty – means blinded by pride, or drunk with pride.

lovers of pleasure – The problem with lover of pleasure is that you reach that point of been there done that, so you have to increase the frequency of intensity, bigger, better, faster, farther..... We see it today, and it is leading so many people to depression and/or destruction.

**(2 Timothy 3:5 NKJV) having a form of godliness but denying its power. And from such people turn away!**

I am amazed in our country, of how far God has been pushed out, how far the country has turned from God to do their own things, yet how many still profess to be Christians and His followers.

*(Titus 1:15 NKJV) To the pure all things are pure, but to those who are defiled and unbelieving nothing is pure; but even their mind and conscience are defiled.*

*(Titus 1:16 NKJV) They profess to know God, but in works they deny Him, being abominable, disobedient, and disqualified for every good work.*

A Recent Survey: 60 Percent of Born Again Christians Under 40 Say Jesus Isn't the Only Way to Salvation. So they profess to be believers, but 60% (which is huge), say Jesus is not the only way. What that survey means is those people truly do not understand the gospel, and to which I say are most likely not saved themselves, because:

*John 3:3 (NKJV)* <sup>3</sup> Jesus answered and said to him, "Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God."

*John 14:6 (NKJV)* <sup>6</sup> Jesus said to him, "I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me."

Now consider this, all these 18 things we just read they are (all negative), yet the Scripture tells us they have a form of godliness (go-likeness). They put on an outward appearance of godliness, and they maintain it. I personally believe they believe it. All these 18 ungod-likeness things they do an are, and yet they believe they are godly.

Worse.... There are many like just like them, we are reading of multitudes and majorities, all thinking they are god-like. This statement in verse 5 is the scariest out of all; for if they were known as vile and evil, then they would be known for who they truly are. But they will come across, and be received by many, as godly. These actions in the last days, will be associated with godliness. It speaks aloud, that in the last-last days, the Bible will be no mirror that men will look into to see their true reflections. What we have just read (these 18 things) were ever so common in medieval times, what we called the dark-age, where the church kept the people from the Scriptures for themselves, and many of the (popes, bishops, and cardinals) were these very things. When men like John Hus, William Tyndale, John Wycliffe translated the Scriptures into the language of the common people, they were put in prison and eventual killed for it. So hateful towards Wycliffe were they that they dug up his body and burned his bones because their fury against him was not satisfied in his death.

At last count of the 195 countries in the world, in 52 of them it is illegal to own a bible.

Sadly for many churches and pastors, the Word is one piece, not the piece; as the Word has to compete in the church and the ministries for social events, business matters, new buildings, and technology – and is not the primary focus of the ministry.

And..... point #4 says all those who desire to live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution, and see who and where it comes from, those doing such evil (those 18), yet consider themselves "godly".

*2 Timothy 3:12 (NKJV)* <sup>12</sup> Yes, and all who desire to live godly in Christ Jesus will suffer persecution.

from such people turn away! – Jesus ate with the Sinners and Tax Collectors, but not for fellowship, but so that they may see who their Savior was. We are not to run from those people who live such ways, we are to reach out to them, but the warning here is not become a part of their lifestyle.

## **2 - Be Knowing: Perilous People Will Want to Creep in Households (3:6-7)**

**(2 Timothy 3:6 NKJV) For of this sort are those who creep into households and make captives of gullible women loaded down with sins, led away by various lusts,**

**(2 Timothy 3:7 NKJV) always learning and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.**

These people say we have a greater insight, you don't need the Bible. They knock on your door Saturday morning, or come by on their bicycles.

This also speaks of Christians; some continually just keep falling back into the same sins over and over. They know the truth, they hear the word, they come to Bible study, but always keep getting drawn back into their vice. They will excuse it, or say you don't understand, but they are the ones that don't understand. Listen Jesus is coming back and you can be free of all this.

People keeping losing to these things, they don't know freedom is available now, and He is coming back soon.

I see a life-giving example in Acts, of why Christians drift off. It applies for us to guard ourselves against, but also a great example to remind others what they may be doing, and show them the example that they are heading towards shipwreck is they don't heed the word of God.

*Acts 27:7–14 (NKJV)* <sup>7</sup> When we had sailed slowly many days, and arrived with difficulty off Cnidus, the wind not permitting us to proceed, we sailed under the shelter of Crete off Salmone. <sup>8</sup> Passing it with difficulty, we came to a place called Fair Havens, near the city of Lasea. <sup>9</sup> Now when much time had been spent, and sailing was now dangerous because the Fast was already over, Paul advised them, <sup>10</sup> saying, “Men, I perceive that this voyage will end with disaster and much loss, not only of the cargo and ship, but also our lives.” <sup>11</sup> Nevertheless the centurion was more persuaded by the helmsman and the owner of the ship than by the things spoken by Paul. <sup>12</sup> And because the harbor was not suitable to winter in, the majority advised to set sail from there also, if by any means they could reach Phoenix, a harbor of Crete opening toward the southwest and northwest, and winter there. <sup>13</sup> When the south wind blew softly, supposing that they had obtained their desire, putting out to sea, they sailed close by Crete. <sup>14</sup> But not long after, a tempestuous head wind arose, called Euroclydon.

At first the wind blew softly, and in a favorable direction. That's always the way it is. When you don't listen to the Word of the Lord, when you go your own way, when you do your own thing, at first you're just blown along softly. But when the fierce winds come—which they always do—you're blown away totally.

Please note four reasons that make this a perfect example of how not to know God's will as you sail through life and journey towards heaven:

- The sailors were impatient (Acts 27:9). Although it was not the season for sailing, these guys wanted to get on with their journey. The Word says, “He that believeth in the Lord must not make haste” (see Isaiah 28:16). Are you impatient? Slow down. When you don't know what to do—don't do anything. When you're not sure which way to go, stay where you are. Wait on the Lord. It's so hard to do, but so important.

- The sailors took a vote (Acts 27:11). The centurion said, “Okay Paul, I hear what you're saying, but I also hear the owner, the captain, and the crew,” and Paul was outvoted. God is not an American, folks, and if we make decisions relating to the kingdom on a democratic basis, we're in a heap of trouble. Ask Moses. If the Israelites had voted during their journey through the wilderness, he would have been ousted the first week. We need to know what the heart of God is—not what the majority says.

- The sailors tested the winds (Acts 27:13). “The answer is blowing in the wind,” may be true for Bob Dylan, but it's not true for you and me as believers. We're not to say, “The way the wind is blowing and circumstances are pointing will determine my course.” No, there needs to be a solid inner conviction, a Holy Spirit direction.

- The sailors sought ease (Acts 27:12). They wanted to get to Phoenix. Why? Phoenix was where all of the sailors wintered. There were lots of restaurants, movie theatres, golf courses. No doubt these guys thought, Why should we stay here? We're only sixty-eight miles from Phoenix. That's the place to be—we can even pick up a Suns game. Sometimes we, like these sailors, ask, “Where is it most comfortable? Where is it easiest?” instead of “What does the Lord know will be best for me?”

*Courson, J. (2003). Jon Courson's Application Commentary (pp. 848–849). Nashville, TN: Thomas Nelson.*

Wasted debates, wasted time, instead of studying the Word of God and seeking what God says about the matter, Christian cruise the internet and news channels to hear what others say.

I see a life-giving example in Acts, of why Christians drift off. It applies for us to guard ourselves against, but also a great example to remind others what they may be doing, and show them the example that they are heading towards shipwreck is they don't heed the word of God.

### **3 - Be Knowing: Perilous People Will Be Made Known to the Church (3:8-9)**

**(2 Timothy 3:8 NKJV) Now as Jannes and Jambres resisted Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, disapproved concerning the faith;**

**(2 Timothy 3:9 NKJV) but they will progress no further, for their folly will be manifest to all, as theirs also was.**

Referring back to Exodus chapter 7. Moses came to Pharaoh and said God has said let my people go. Pharaoh said no way, so to demonstrate his power Moses threw his staff down and it turned into a serpent, Pharaoh called his magicians Jannes and Jambres, and they did the same. Moses touched forth the waters of the Nile river and turned it into blood, the magicians Jannes and Jambres did the same. Moses brought frogs upon the land, the magicians Jannes and Jambres did the same. Then Moses brought lice upon the land of Egypt but the magicians Jannes and Jambres could not do the same, and then they said to Pharaoh this must be the finger of God.

These men had power, but not the power of God, what they really did was make matters worse. What little good water was left they turned it to blood, they brought more frogs. That is truly what the “world’s help” does; it has a form of power, but in the end it truly makes matters worse. The answer, the power, lies in a person, not a program or project, the answer lies in the person of Jesus Christ.

Somewhat heavy passage, but God inserts here, like Jannes and Jambres, eventually their façade fades, and people (many – not all) see through it, and come to the truth, and are at the end of the empty words, and desire something greater, something that is true and has a foundation to stand on, and so they say this world (Egypt) is not it, and they thus are ready for truth that sets free.

**John 8:32 (NKJV)** <sup>32</sup> And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.”

**John 8:36 (NKJV)** <sup>36</sup> Therefore if the Son makes you free, you shall be free indeed.

So this isn’t a chapter of defeat, but truly victory, and so hang on Christian, endure like good soldiers in the midst of a long battle, like an athlete at the halfway point of the marathon, and the farmer waiting for the springs rain (which can only come from above).

*2 Timothy 2:1-7 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> You therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. <sup>2</sup> And the things that you have heard from me among many witnesses, commit these to faithful men who will be able to teach others also. <sup>3</sup> You therefore must endure hardship as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. <sup>4</sup> No one engaged in warfare entangles himself with the affairs of this life, that he may please him who enlisted him as a soldier. <sup>5</sup> And also if anyone competes in athletics, he is not crowned unless he competes according to the rules. <sup>6</sup> The hardworking farmer must be first to partake of the crops. <sup>7</sup> Consider what I say, and may the Lord give you understanding in all things.

#### **4 - Be Knowing: Perilous People Will Come Against God’s People (3:10-12)**

**(2 Timothy 3:10 NKJV) But you have carefully followed my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, longsuffering, love, perseverance,**

**(2 Timothy 3:11 NKJV) persecutions, afflictions, which happened to me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra; what persecutions I endured. And out of them all the Lord delivered me.**

Now Paul is saying Timothy you know me, what I have been through, who I am, you’ve seen my walk, my lifestyle, my faith. You know me Timothy, my message I gave was flawless, it was no Jannes and Jambres, they do magic tricks and talk in riddles, impressive for a moment or two, but they can’t keep it up.

Timothy, Paul says, you’ve seen my walk. Follow me as I follow Him. What a statement to say to our kids and family, you know me, you know my walk, follow me, and even if/since we aren’t perfect, we can say follow Him, know Him. If you look at Him, you’ll never be disappointed.

For us, our message and messenger is blameless, flawless – Our Jesus. It is wonderful to say we follow the one who is holy, perfect, and faultless. You can’t deny that, people can only deny Him. We don’t have to be embarrassed about His message, it is a message of love, for He backed his message with action, the cross.

**(2 Timothy 3:12 NKJV) Yes, and all who desire to live godly in Christ Jesus will suffer persecution.**

All will suffer, underline it, put it in your promise box. That's why I am going through what I'm going through why I am in this dungeon, because of my walk, of who I follow.

This verse is in the context of this chapter. This verse is a reminder that those who think they are godly will be the persecutors, but we have a calling to endure as good soldiers, because in the end, there will be those who truly want to be set free.

The children of Israel were upset with Moses, as they expected instant deliverance, but instead they had to endure, more cruelty of the taskmaster, and make bricks with mud, but in the end of their suffering, they experienced the greatest triumph recorded in all the scripture. They defeated the great military power and nation on the planet, without one sword in their possession. God always delivers Christians, and He will deliver you, only now you and I must endure the hardship of this present suffering.

*Exodus 5:17-19 (NKJV) <sup>17</sup> But he said, "You are idle! Idle! Therefore you say, 'Let us go and sacrifice to the LORD.' <sup>18</sup> Therefore go now and work; for no straw shall be given you, yet you shall deliver the quota of bricks." <sup>19</sup> And the officers of the children of Israel saw that they were in trouble after it was said, "You shall not reduce any bricks from your daily quota."*

### **5 - Be Knowing: Perilous People Will Be Defeated by The Word of God (3:13-17)**

**(2 Timothy 3:13 NKJV) But evil men and impostors will grow worse and worse, deceiving and being deceived.**

**(2 Timothy 3:14 NKJV) But you must continue in the things which you have learned and been assured of, knowing from whom you have learned them,**

**(2 Timothy 3:15 NKJV) and that from childhood you have known the Holy Scriptures, which are able to make you wise for salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus.**

Christian you will be thrown so much stuff in these last days, evil men and imposter trying to deceive you. It will all sound so good, but in the end it will be a Jannes and Jambres.

Timothy had learned from his grandparent, from Paul, Paul is saying Timothy you have learned from many. God will put many people in your life to strength and equip you.

which you have learned – noticed the learned is past tense, stick with what you have learned.

The theme of this Book:

*(2 Timothy 1:13 NKJV) Hold fast the pattern of sound words which you have heard from me, in faith and love which are in Christ Jesus.*

*(2 Timothy 1:14 NKJV) That good thing which was committed to you, keep by the Holy Spirit who dwells in us.*

Last days will be perilous, so stick with the main thing; don't get caught up with the babble, stay focused, stay basic, you have been taught by many, you don't need to learn higher spiritual things, but stick to the basic spiritual things.

**(2 Timothy 3:16 NKJV) All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness,**

**(2 Timothy 3:17 NKJV) that the man of God may be complete, thoroughly equipped for every good work.**

All Scripture, both New Testament and Old Testament.

*(Matthew 4:4 NKJV) But He answered and said, "It is written, 'Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds from the mouth of God.'"*

People can't decide what's inspired or not, because people will pick and choose what they like. Instead of the Bible judging me, I now judge the Bible.

Profitable - ophelimos, o-fel'-ee-mos;; helpful or serviceable, i.e. advantageous:--profit (-able). No one goes into business to lose money, to go bankrupt. We don't work for our employer in hopes that the company goes out of business. Approach the study of this Word in the same manner. Look for the profit, know that God wants to bring you a 100 fold return on your investment of reading and studying it. As we have said before, God will not give His Word independent of Himself. Jesus is the Word of God, the Word became flesh, He is the Bread of Life.

4 things the Scriptures are, and 2 results they bring.

The Scriptures are for:

1. Doctrine: what we believe and why. Meaning what is right, what is right about God, hell, man, love
2. Rebuke: what is wrong. The Bible shows us the truth about our sin.
3. Correction: how to get right
4. Instruction: how to stay right. How to stay right with God, treat your spouse, kids, employer, employees.

The results are:

1. Complete/mature: how to be perfect, literally fully ripe. Most Christians are not ripe yet
2. Equipped for good work: God saved us, and He is going to use us.

complete, thoroughly equipped – I'm your all in all. The Soldier, the Athlete, the Farmer, they must be equipped if they are to complete what is before them.

Outline: Perilous Times, Perilous People, and a Prepared Church

1. Be Knowing: Perilous People Will Come in the Form of godliness (3:2-5)
2. Be Knowing: Perilous People Will Want to Creep in Households (3:6-7)
3. Be Knowing: Perilous People Will Be Made Known to the Church (3:8-9)
4. Be Knowing: Perilous People Will Come Against God's People (3:10-12)
5. Be Knowing: Perilous People Will Be Defeated by The Word of God (3:13-17)

Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

**In Every Study**

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

## Chapter 4

Passage: 2 Timothy 4:1-8

Title: Why Preach the Word?

Summary: In our passage today the speaks to Timothy, and us today, to “preach the word”. Why preach? Because it changes lives! For the hearer, and the declarer. Join us as God gives us another “power passage” of His very heart.

*2 Timothy 4:1-8 (NKJV) <sup>1</sup> I charge you therefore before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, who will judge the living and the dead at His appearing and His kingdom: <sup>2</sup> Preach the word! Be ready in season and out of season. Convince, rebuke, exhort, with all longsuffering and teaching. <sup>3</sup> For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but according to their own desires, because they have itching ears, they will heap up for themselves teachers; <sup>4</sup> and they will turn their ears away from the truth, and be turned aside to fables. <sup>5</sup> But you be watchful in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, fulfill your ministry. <sup>6</sup> For I am already being poured out as a drink offering, and the time of my departure is at hand. <sup>7</sup> I have fought the good fight, I have finished the race, I have kept the faith. <sup>8</sup> Finally, there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, will give to me on that Day, and not to me only but also to all who have loved His appearing.*

### **Dark Damp Dungeon**

The time of this writing is Paul's second imprisonment. This is Paul's last Epistle, as he writes he is imprisoned in a dark damp prison cell. In his prior imprisonment's he was basically under house arrest. There he was chained to a guard 24/7, but the conditions were as close to home as you could get, he had his clothing and blankets, and the basic necessities and basic comforts of home, and visitors could come and go as they pleased. But for this imprisonment, he was in a cold damp crunched cell. I saw these prison cells while I was over in region. Not every cell was the same height, it would vary based on your height, the ceiling would always be one or two foot lower than the persons height so they could never fully stand up, they would always be crunched over. There were no toilets, but a common trench that ran through all the cells, thus everyone's waste would flow through everyone's cell. The walls were concrete, and would seep from the outside weather, the cell floor always damp, sometimes even soaked, (Paul will ask Timothy bring me my coat (4:13), for comfort). Of course with these conditions, rats and pests would be living among the prisoners.

### **Insurrection / Persecution**

Paul's first imprisonment was due to the local Jewish religious leaders, but this imprisonment was due to a much greater wave going through the world. There was massive persecution against the Christians at this time. The charge against Paul for his second imprisonment was inciting an insurrection against Rome,

Historical writings tell us, it was July 19, AD64 Rome was in flames. Though it was never known who started it, it was on such a scale that it was clear that it was not an accident. Many writings said it was Emperor Caesar Nero himself who set the blaze. They say as Rome burned he sat on his balcony twiddling his fingers, just watching it burn. He was bored with his world, nothing left to conquer, so in his mind if he could burn Rome down, then he could rebuild it. Rebuild it bigger and more fabulous, a tribute for the ages to come, a legacy for him to be remembered. As the citizens of Rome were outraged at the arson against their city, Nero accused the Christians of burning Rome, thus started the wave of persecution against the Christians.

### **Abandoned by Everyone**

On top of these conditions Paul was abandoned by virtually everyone, as we will read in chapter four. The reason he was abandoned, everyone was afraid to be associated with Paul because they feared they would suffer the same fate as him. For unlike Paul's confident hope of release during his first imprisonment (Phil 1:19,25,26;2:24; Philemon 1:22), this time he had no such hope, he knew execution was imminent.

### **My Time is at Hand**

*(2 Timothy 4:6 KJV) For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand.*

## Passing the Mantel / Stand Strong Timothy

Yet with all this, what is Paul's heart, his young protégé Timothy. He writes him to encourage him to continue in the ministry in strength and power. It was the passing of the mantel, Timothy would now have to be the one who would lead and give spiritual leadership to the churches in the days of persecution. No small task, Paul will tell Timothy you must persevere, you must be a pattern for others to follow, you must prevail against the perils before you, and you must preach the Word.

## Last Words

These are the last words of the greatest pastor/teacher/evangelist that ever walked the earth, next to Jesus. We should make this book become a part of our very being.

## Theme of the Book:

*(2 Timothy 1:13 NKJV) Hold fast the pattern of sound words which you have heard from me, in faith and love which are in Christ Jesus.*

*(2 Timothy 1:14 NKJV) That good thing which was committed to you, keep by the Holy Spirit who dwells in us.*

## Detailed Outline Chapter 4: Preach the Word!

- The Charge to Preach (4:1-2)
- The Need for Preaching (4:3-5)
- The Prize for Preaching (4:6-8)
- The Price for Preaching (4:9-22)

## Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

## In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

## 1.) The Charge to Preach (4:1-2)

**(2 Timothy 4:1 NKJV) I charge you therefore before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, who will judge the living and the dead at His appearing and His kingdom:**

**(2 Timothy 4:2 NKJV) Preach the word! Be ready in season and out of season. Convince, rebuke, exhort, with all longsuffering and teaching.**

## Charge / Testify Under oath / not Optional

*I charge you therefore* – the word charge here means to testify under oath. Paul is saying Timothy, I have this straight form the Lord, and now all who read it today, this is not optional service, you are to Preach the Word.

## Before God

Before God, means in the presence of God. The oath is taken in the very presence of God Himself.

## **Preach / to Herald / not a Negotiator**

*Preach the word* – Preach means to herald. In Paul's day a ruler had a special herald who made announcements to the people. He was commissioned by the ruler to make his announcements in a loud, clear voice so everyone could hear the announcement. He was not an ambassador with the privilege of negotiating, he was a messenger with a proclamation to be heard and heeded. He wasn't to debate the announcement, nor defend it, just to proclaim it for he did not write it. For the hearer not to heed the ruler's messenger was serious; to abuse the messenger was even worse.

The world is so hopeless, this message is their only hope.

Christian, you need only declare the Word..... and then let God do the rest. Now wisdom and power, as we have studied, after you preach, you retreat to pray for the hearer of that Word you just spoke, that their heart would be readied to receive the Word, be guided in the truth of the Word. Remember the parable of the Sower and the Seed, as the birds of the air, the weeds of the earth choke, and the soil is shallow, all destroy the Word taking root.

*John 16:13–15 (NKJV)* <sup>13</sup> However, when He, the Spirit of truth, has come, He will guide you into all truth; for He will not speak on His own authority, but whatever He hears He will speak; and He will tell you things to come. <sup>14</sup> He will glorify Me, for He will take of what is Mine and declare it to you. <sup>15</sup> All things that the Father has are Mine. Therefore I said that He will take of Mine and declare it to you.

*Matthew 13:18–24 (NKJV)* <sup>18</sup> “Therefore hear the parable of the sower: <sup>19</sup> When anyone hears the word of the kingdom, and does not understand it, then the wicked one comes and snatches away what was sown in his heart. This is he who received seed by the wayside. <sup>20</sup> But he who received the seed on stony places, this is he who hears the word and immediately receives it with joy; <sup>21</sup> yet he has no root in himself, but endures only for a while. For when tribulation or persecution arises because of the word, immediately he stumbles. <sup>22</sup> Now he who received seed among the thorns is he who hears the word, and the cares of this world and the deceitfulness of riches choke the word, and he becomes unfruitful. <sup>23</sup> But he who received seed on the good ground is he who hears the word and understands it, who indeed bears fruit and produces: some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.” <sup>24</sup> Another parable He put forth to them, saying: “The kingdom of heaven is like a man who sowed good seed in his field;

## **What to preach / The Word / the whole Counsel**

Notice what we are to preach? the Word. Not our opinions, or pet peeves, or anything else, but the Word. In churches today, plays, dramas, testimonies, dinners, concerts, etc should never substitute the preaching of the Word. They are nice, but that cannot be the diet of the church, you have to feed them solid food, and only snacks on occasion

*(Acts 20:26 NKJV)* “Therefore I testify to you this day that I am innocent of the blood of all men.

*(Acts 20:27 NKJV)* “For I have not shunned to declare to you the whole counsel of God.

*(Acts 20:28 NKJV)* “Therefore take heed to yourselves and to all the flock, among which the Holy Spirit has made you overseers, to shepherd the church of God which He purchased with His own blood.

*(Acts 20:29 NKJV)* “For I know this, that after my departure savage wolves will come in among you, not sparing the flock.

*(Acts 20:30 NKJV)* “Also from among yourselves men will rise up, speaking perverse things, to draw away the disciples after themselves.

## **Be Ready / Urgency / Living & Dead / Make Opportunities not Excuses**

*Be ready in season and out of season* – Be ready means to have a sense of urgency..... and keep a sense of urgency. The urgency is verse 1, the living and dead will be judged.

When Paul referred to the Lord Jesus Christ he added who shall judge the quick the living and the dead. This idea of judgment is a primary theme of Paul's preaching and writing. Jesus Christ is the one to whom this judgment is given by the father. It will happen at his appearing and the coming of his Kingdom. Appearing is the Greek word used to refer to the Roman emperor first ascension to the throne and secondly a visit to a province or town. In this application both concepts fit Christ appearing and Kingdom.

*Acts 17:31 (NKJV)* <sup>31</sup> because He has appointed a day on which He will judge the world in righteousness by the Man whom He has ordained. He has given assurance of this to all by raising Him from the dead.”

*Romans 2:16 (NKJV)* <sup>16</sup> in the day when God will judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ, according to my gospel.

*1 Corinthians 4:5 (NKJV)* <sup>5</sup> Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord comes, who will both bring to light the hidden things of darkness and reveal the counsels of the hearts. Then each one's praise will come from God.

Once, a lady was accused of a crime. She was guilty and she knew she needed a crack defense attorney. A lawyer was recommended. She wrote down his name and address. But she delayed in contacting him. When her trial date grew closer she realized she needed to act, so she called the attorney. Sadly, it was too late. He explained that if she'd called just a week earlier he would've been happy to take her case, but two days ago he'd been appointed a judge. Instead of being her advocate, he had now become her judge! And this is going to happen to millions of people on Earth. Today Jesus sits at the right hand of God as our advocate - our attorney. He's willing to plead our case and secure for us the mercy and pardon of God. But soon, when Jesus returns, He'll be appointed Judge. And He'll be forced to condemn everyone who ignored or opposed Him. Don't wait to call Jesus...

So Christian, Don't wait now is the time. "Preaching Season" is always open. Don't wait for a mission trip to preach, or inside the church walls, take it to your streets and family homes. **It is easy to be making excuses when we ought to be making opportunities.**

Be instant in season and out of season is rendered in the amplified Bible keep your sense of urgency, be at hand and be ready whether the opportunity seems to be favorable or unfavorable, whether it's convenient or inconvenient, whether it be welcome or unwelcome. Instant is the verb in the Greek that means to stand by be at hand to be ready to be prepared

As you may know I enjoy the outdoors and hunting. But if there is one reason I would stop hunting it is my wife's expectations on me that every outing results in success. It is a big forest out there. But the general rule for hunting is..... you have to put your time in, and wait. And then when the moment comes, you have to be ready, trained, steady, and confident. You see the correlation? And, don't let the pressures of success keep you at home on the couch.

### **3 Elements for Preaching**

*Convince, rebuke, exhort*, - Preaching is marked by these three elements.

- Convince – the meaning here is to expose. To bring them to conviction, to show fault.
- Rebuke – I'll sum it up in my words, "to make them uncomfortable for their actions or lifestyle."
- Exhort – to bring them comfort and encouragement. For those who are under conviction of their sin, and have repented, then we are to comfort and encourage them.

Preachers should afflict the comfortable, and comfort the afflicted.

### **Longsuffering / Like a Farmer**

*with all longsuffering* - Like a Farmer we have to have patience with the seeds we plant, the harvest won't come immediately.

*John 16:13-15 (NKJV)* <sup>13</sup> However, when He, the Spirit of truth, has come, He will guide you into all truth; for He will not speak on His own authority, but whatever He hears He will speak; and He will tell you things to come. <sup>14</sup> He will glorify Me, for He will take of what is Mine and declare it to you. <sup>15</sup> All things that the Father has are Mine. Therefore I said that He will take of Mine and declare it to you.

*Matthew 13:18-24 (NKJV)* <sup>18</sup> "Therefore hear the parable of the sower: <sup>19</sup> When anyone hears the word of the kingdom, and does not understand it, then the wicked one comes and snatches away what was sown in his heart. This is he who received seed by the wayside. <sup>20</sup> But he who received the seed on stony places, this is he who hears the word and immediately receives it with joy; <sup>21</sup> yet he has no root in himself, but endures only for a while. For when tribulation or persecution arises because of the word, immediately he stumbles. <sup>22</sup> Now he who received seed among the thorns is he who hears the word, and the cares of this world and the deceitfulness of riches choke the word, and he becomes unfruitful. <sup>23</sup> But he who received seed on the good ground is he who hears the word and understands it, who indeed bears fruit and produces: some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty." <sup>24</sup> Another parable He put forth to them, saying: "The kingdom of heaven is like a man who sowed good seed in his field;

### **Teaching / Doctrine / Application / not Speechmaking**

*and teaching* - Now the NKJV calls it teaching, but the correct translation should be "doctrine".

True preaching is the explanation and application of Bible doctrine. Anything else is just religious speechmaking.

Paul gives the charge to preach, and now the reason we need to preach.

## **2.) The Need for Preaching (4:3-5)**

**(2 Timothy 4:3 NKJV) For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but according to their own desires, because they have itching ears, they will heap up for themselves teachers;**

**(2 Timothy 4:4 NKJV) and they will turn their ears away from the truth, and be turned aside to fables.**

**(2 Timothy 4:5 NKJV) But you be watchful in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, fulfill your ministry.**

### **Perilous Times / no sound Doctrine / Itchy ears / No Truth**

We live in perilous times, the word is inspired, but people will still reject it. People will not endure sound doctrine. They will find teachers that tell them what they want to hear (itching ears). Once a teacher just tells people what they want to hear, gives them a bunch of stories and illustrations that make them feel good (fables), then the truth will be gone, and they will be set-up to follow any old lie, and/or the desires of their flesh.

**(2 Timothy 4:5 NKJV) But you be watchful in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, fulfill your ministry.**

Here are four brief imperatives told to Timothy.

### **Be Watchful / 2 Reasons A&B / Our Youth**

*V.5 - But you be watchful in all things* – Timothy, look around you, these are perilous times. I feel a sense of urgency to preach,

- A: because the rapture or death could happen today,
- B: because as each day goes by, people get sucked further and further into the deception of this world around us.

That is why youth ministry is so important, we have to reach the youth with the gospel before they takeoff down a road that we may never see them again. The lies of sex, drugs, and the trinkets of this world.

### **Endure Afflictions / Battle Wounds / the Prize is Near**

*V.5 - endure afflictions* – we are soldiers, war brings battle wounds, endure a little while longer, the prize is near.

### **Work of Evangelist / Work means Work / Most meaningful comes from Work**

*V.5 - do the work of an evangelist, fulfill your ministry.* - the word for evangelists means a messenger of good and that is what our message is it is good and it gives life and it gives abundant life.

### **Gospel – Sing Out / We have New Song in Hearts // Present as Such**

In Matthew 10 when Jesus sends the disciples out, He says go to Israel, the Jews first. Tell them the kingdom of heaven is at hand. Tell them the King has come. The Greek word for preach is *kerusso*, it means “to sing out. That’s the word for preach. Sing it out. Sing out the gospel! God has given us a new song, in our hearts to sing, a new song, praises for the King. Don’t turn sharing into some crybaby cowboy song where the dog dies, the girlfriend leaves, and the ranch burns down. This gospel, this song, is a wonderful, it is a joy to be alive, love song. Present it as such we you share it. It isn’t I got bad news you are going to hell, but I have great news heaven’s doors have been opened for you, let me tell ya how to walk through them.

*Matthew 10:5-7 (NKJV)* <sup>5</sup> These twelve Jesus sent out and commanded them, saying: “Do not go into the way of the Gentiles, and do not enter a city of the Samaritans. <sup>6</sup> But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. <sup>7</sup> And as you go, preach, saying, ‘The kingdom of heaven is at hand.’

## **George Whitefield**

George Whitefield one of the men used mightily by the Lord in the Great Awakening in this Country. The Great Awakening was a religious revival that impacted the English colonies in America during the 1730s and 1740s. The movement came at a time when the idea of secular rationalism was being emphasized, and passion for religion had grown stale.

He said:

*Other men may preach the gospel better than I, but no man can preach a better gospel*

Folks, we have the greatest news in the world, and our world, our Country needs it now! Don't worry about how well you can preach, just sing it out from your heart, and let the Lord take it from there.

V.5 - *do the work of an evangelist, fulfill your ministry* -The word work here means, work. Evangelism is work. But I tell you something: I really enjoy skiing, basketball, going to a good movie, but when they are over, its over. But the things that are the most meaningful to me are the result of work. It is through my work that I have my home, my car, my clothing, my food, my education. The same is true with evangelism, it is work, sometimes extremely hard (hence chapter 2: soldier, athlete, farmer), but the work will be so worth it, when for all of eternity, someone will be there because will were willing to co-work, co-labor with the Lord. Then the Prize comes.

### **3.) The Prize for Preaching (4:6-8)**

**(2 Timothy 4:6 NKJV) For I am already being poured out as a drink offering, and the time of my departure is at hand.**

**(2 Timothy 4:7 NKJV) I have fought the good fight, I have finished the race, I have kept the faith.**

#### **Drink Offering / Departure at hand / Anchor / Unyoke / Tent**

Paul gives 2 illustrations to show his triumphant view of death. The first is the Old Testament drink offering wine poured around the base of the altar we read that in numbers chapter 15 verses one through 10. Paul said I am now ready to be offered poured out as a libation. The verb tense indicates the action is already in process

*Numbers 15:1-10 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> And the LORD spoke to Moses, saying, <sup>2</sup> "Speak to the children of Israel, and say to them: 'When you have come into the land you are to inhabit, which I am giving to you, <sup>3</sup> and you make an offering by fire to the LORD, a burnt offering or a sacrifice, to fulfill a vow or as a freewill offering or in your appointed feasts, to make a sweet aroma to the LORD, from the herd or the flock, <sup>4</sup> then he who presents his offering to the LORD shall bring a grain offering of one-tenth of an ephah of fine flour mixed with one-fourth of a hin of oil; <sup>5</sup> and one-fourth of a hin of wine as a drink offering you shall prepare with the burnt offering or the sacrifice, for each lamb. <sup>6</sup> Or for a ram you shall prepare as a grain offering two-tenths of an ephah of fine flour mixed with one-third of a hin of oil; <sup>7</sup> and as a drink offering you shall offer one-third of a hin of wine as a sweet aroma to the LORD. <sup>8</sup> And when you prepare a young bull as a burnt offering, or as a sacrifice to fulfill a vow, or as a peace offering to the LORD, <sup>9</sup> then shall be offered with the young bull a grain offering of three-tenths of an ephah of fine flour mixed with half a hin of oil; <sup>10</sup> and you shall bring as the drink offering half a hin of wine as an offering made by fire, a sweet aroma to the LORD.

The second illustration is found in the word departure as it was used in its time meant:

- To take up anchor - ready to set sail
- Unyoke the oxen - been plowing long enough, time to rest.
- Fold up the tent - time to break camp and move on

Paul was saying it was time for him to take up the anchor, unyoke from his labors, fold up the tent and move on, it connotes freedom. Dismantling of a tent is reminiscent of the words in second Peter one 14 through 15

*2 Peter 1:14-15 (NKJV)* <sup>14</sup> knowing that shortly I must put off my tent, just as our Lord Jesus Christ showed me. <sup>15</sup> Moreover I will be careful to ensure that you always have a reminder of these things after my decease.

#### **Fought the fight / What a Statement / Sometimes don't want to Fight / Not Optional**

V.7 - *I have fought the good fight* - What a statement, to live a long life and say I've fought the good fight. For me, I really feel like my fight has just begun, and there is much more fight left,

especially considering that we live in perilous times. To be honest, sometimes I really don't feel like fighting. Sometimes I want to rest from the training and the fight, I want to sit ringside and watch others for a while. But my friends, service isn't optional, it is a commandment:

*(2 Timothy 4:1 NKJV) I charge you therefore before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, who will judge the living and the dead at His appearing and His kingdom:*

*(2 Timothy 4:2 NKJV) Preach the word! Be ready in season and out of season. Convince, rebuke, exhort, with all longsuffering and teaching.*

Here Paul is, a word for all who are tired.... Paul refused to tap out, even when faced with all the trials and oppositions he endured. Christian, don't tap out of your tough marriage, singles don't tap out of your purity, youth don't tap out of going against the flow, Christian, what ever the devil and world throws at you, don't tap out! Finish Well!

### **I Have Finished the Race**

Paul said I have finished my course which is translated race. Notice Paul did not say I have won my race rather he said I have finished. So we see continual, soldier, athlete, and farmer as life illustration for us to live.

*2 Timothy 2:1-7 (NKJV) <sup>1</sup> You therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. <sup>2</sup> And the things that you have heard from me among many witnesses, commit these to faithful men who will be able to teach others also. <sup>3</sup> You therefore must endure hardship as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. <sup>4</sup> No one engaged in warfare entangles himself with the affairs of this life, that he may please him who enlisted him as a soldier. <sup>5</sup> And also if anyone competes in athletics, he is not crowned unless he competes according to the rules. <sup>6</sup> The hardworking farmer must be first to partake of the crops. <sup>7</sup> Consider what I say, and may the Lord give you understanding in all things.*

### **Kept the Faith / New Believer Faith / 2 Cor 5 / Job 31:15**

*I have kept the faith* - Paul had kept the faith, through it all, even when things were bad, even when it appeared that this couldn't be the will of God. We have such a miss conception of what faith truly is. Once the blessings leave, we start to question everything, ourselves, others, and even God. So often our faith is based on emotional and external circumstances, not on what God is trying to do in us.

Oswald Chambers wrote: We have the idea that God rewards us for our faith, and it may be so in the initial stages. But we do not earn anything through faith—faith brings us into the right relationship with God and gives Him His opportunity to work. Yet God frequently has to knock the bottom out of your experience as His saint to get you in direct contact with Himself. God wants you to understand that it is a life of faith, not a life of emotional enjoyment of His blessings. The beginning of your life of faith was very narrow and intense, centered around a small amount of experience that had as much emotion as faith in it, and it was full of light and sweetness. Then God withdrew His conscious blessings to teach you to "walk by faith" ( 2 Corinthians 5:7 ). And you are worth much more to Him now than you were in your days of conscious delight with your thrilling testimony.

Faith by its very nature must be tested and tried. And the real trial of faith is not that we find it difficult to trust God, but that God's character must be proven as trustworthy in our own minds. Faith being worked out into reality must experience times of unbroken isolation. Never confuse the trial of faith with the ordinary discipline of life, because a great deal of what we call the trial of faith is the inevitable result of being alive. Faith, as the Bible teaches it, is faith in God coming against everything that contradicts Him—a faith that says, "I will remain true to God's character whatever He may do."

The highest and the greatest expression of faith in the whole Bible is—"Though He slay me, yet will I trust Him" ( Job 13:15 ).

**(2 Timothy 4:8 NKJV) Finally, there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, will give to me on that Day, and not to me only but also to all who have loved His appearing.**

## **Crown / Olympian / Jesus will crown you**

Crown - the Greek word is "stephanos", it was a wreath made with leaves, and was the crown that was given to the Olympians upon victory of an event. But the crown Paul was to receive wasn't something that would eventually wither and fade, but a crown of righteousness. Imagine this gang, God Himself placing the wreath on your head after you finish your fight, after you take-up your anchor, pull the tent stakes and fold the tent up, imagine Him putting the crown on your head and saying well done, you competed according to the rules, you were not disqualified, you are a victor. How much is that worth to you. I remind this to myself when I want to take a break, and rest while.

## **Who was Paul Fighting For?**

Paul said he fought the good fight, therefore he must have been in a fight, but who was he really fighting for? Paul wasn't fighting for himself; he was fighting for others. If you consider it, he was fighting for you and I also, for his example and word are strength to us today.

*(Philippians 1:21 NKJV) For to me, to live is Christ, and to die is gain.*

*(Philippians 1:22 NKJV) But if I live on in the flesh, this will mean fruit from my labor; yet what I shall choose I cannot tell.*

*(Philippians 1:23 NKJV) For I am hard pressed between the two, having a desire to depart and be with Christ, which is far better.*

*(Philippians 1:24 NKJV) Nevertheless to remain in the flesh is more needful for you.*

*(Philippians 1:25 NKJV) And being confident of this, I know that I shall remain and continue with you all for your progress and joy of faith,*

*(Philippians 1:26 NKJV) that your rejoicing for me may be more abundant in Jesus Christ by my coming to you again.*

Paul was willing to battle through it all for others, because soldiers (2 Timothy 2) fight for their nation.... Others.

*(2 Corinthians 11:23 NKJV) Are they ministers of Christ?; I speak as a fool; I am more: in labors more abundant, in stripes above measure, in prisons more frequently, in deaths often.*

*(2 Corinthians 11:24 NKJV) From the Jews five times I received **forty stripes minus one**.*

*(2 Corinthians 11:25 NKJV) Three times I was **beaten with rods**; once I was **stoned**; three times I was **shipwrecked**; a night and a day **I have been in the deep**;*

*(2 Corinthians 11:26 NKJV) in journeys often, in perils of waters, in perils of **robbers**, in perils of my own **countrymen**, in perils of the **Gentiles**, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren;*

*(2 Corinthians 11:27 NKJV) in weariness and toil, in **sleeplessness** often, in **hunger and thirst**, in fastings often, in **cold** and **nakedness**;*

*(2 Corinthians 11:28 NKJV) besides the other things, what comes upon me daily: **my deep concern for all the churches**.*

## **How willing are you to Fight / Do you Realize the Difference you make? / Disengage**

The question for us today is, how willing are you to stay in the fight for others. How much are you willing to go through for the sake of others. I say this because I doubt we truly realize what a difference we can and do make in other peoples lives. It is not until you have disengaged from the battle that you see how many lives get damaged or destroyed by the enemy.

## **Over when the Commander & Chief calls you home**

The truth of the Christian life is this, the battle isn't over until our Commander and Chief calls us home. Iraq will be over when our Commander and Chief says bring our troops home. Someday Jesus is going to call His troops home, we will go rest awhile, then we will stand for one last battle, actually one short battle.

## **Fight / Receive the Crown / Be Served**

And how amazing that will be, and reason enough to stay in the fight until the very end, we will receive the crown, the prize, and then imagine this, He, the Lord of all Creation, will serve us.

*(Luke 12:37 NKJV) "Blessed are those servants whom the master, when he comes, will find watching. Assuredly, I say to you that he will gird himself and have them sit down to eat, and will come and serve them."*

## **Maybe you've Disengaged / Get back in / Jesus will still Serve You**

Hey maybe you have disengaged from the battle, maybe you have failed in previous missions, its ok, you can still get back in the battle. I know that is for a fact because I seen it before, the *(Matthew 26:33 NKJV) Peter answered and said to Him, "Even if all are made to stumble because of You, I will never be made to stumble."*

*(Matthew 26:34 NKJV) Jesus said to him, "Assuredly, I say to you that this night, before the rooster crows, you will deny Me three times."*

*(Matthew 26:35 NKJV) Peter said to Him, "Even if I have to die with You, I will not deny You!" And so said all the disciples.*

*(Matthew 26:36 NKJV) Then Jesus came with them to a place called Gethsemane, and said to the disciples, "Sit here while I go and pray over there."*

*(Matthew 26:40 NKJV) Then He came to the disciples and found them asleep, and said to Peter, "What? Could you not watch with Me one hour?"*

*(John 21:7 NKJV) Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved said to Peter, "It is the Lord!" Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he put on his outer garment (for he had removed it), and plunged into the sea.*

*(John 21:8 NKJV) But the other disciples came in the little boat (for they were not far from land, but about two hundred cubits), dragging the net with fish.*

*(John 21:12 NKJV) Jesus said to them, "Come and eat breakfast." Yet none of the disciples dared ask Him, "Who are You?"; knowing that it was the Lord.*

*(John 21:13 NKJV) Jesus then came and took the bread and gave it to them, and likewise the fish.*

Peter didn't do what the Lord had asked him to do, just pray. Peter had made the great and mighty statement, even if it cost me death, I will not deny you. We all know the story when it came time to stand with Him, Peter disengaged from the battle. But, when he heard it was Jesus calling him to himself, he jumped in the water head first, left it all behind and swam to his Master. And what happened? Jesus served him. Ohh a glorious story, not just for Peter, but for you and me, a bunch of failures.

That is the prize for preaching and enduring afflictions, for doing the work of an evangelist.

### **Loved His Appearing**

Paul knew he would receive this crown at that day the day when Christ will come again. Then he added that the Lord the righteous judge, will award a crown to everyone who loves his appearing. The perfect tense of this verb for appearing suggest they have loved and will continue to love his appearing and church soon and very soon we're going to see the King.

### **3.) The Price for Preaching (4:9-22)**

In verses 9-22, we see an abandoned apostle, and we read of his heartbreak regarding Demas forsaking him after all their time together, and Demas choosing the world over Paul and the Gospel, how heartbreaking for Paul. He will make mention of others who have harmed him (Alexander the coppersmith), and others he has sent forth for ministry purposes (Titus and Tychicus). Only Luke is with Paul at the time of this writing. Beloved, there is a price for preaching, attacks of the devil, attacks of people, abandonment of people who were invested in of the very Gospel you were faithful to deliver, and some that will be sent out leaving you all alone. But simply put, the price and the prize are inseparable.... But when the crown is laid upon our heads by the very God we love..... we will say "worth it all". Beloved, Don't Tap Out!

*2 Timothy 4:9–22 (NKJV) <sup>9</sup> Be diligent to come to me quickly; <sup>10</sup> for Demas has forsaken me, having loved this present world, and has departed for Thessalonica—Crescens for Galatia, Titus for Dalmatia. <sup>11</sup> Only Luke is with me. Get Mark and bring him with you, for he is useful to me for ministry. <sup>12</sup> And Tychicus I have sent to Ephesus. <sup>13</sup> Bring the cloak that I left with Carpus at Troas when you come—and the books, especially the parchments. <sup>14</sup> Alexander the coppersmith did me much harm. May the Lord repay him according to his works. <sup>15</sup> You also must beware of him, for he has greatly resisted our words. <sup>16</sup> At my first defense no one stood with me, but all forsook me. May it not be charged against them. <sup>17</sup> But the Lord stood with me and strengthened me, so that the message might be preached fully through me, and that all the Gentiles might hear. Also I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion. <sup>18</sup> And the Lord will deliver me from every evil work and preserve me for His heavenly kingdom. To Him be glory forever and ever. Amen! <sup>19</sup> Greet Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus. <sup>20</sup> Erastus stayed in Corinth, but Trophimus I have left in Miletus sick. <sup>21</sup> Do your utmost to come before winter. Eubulus greets you, as well as Pudens, Linus, Claudia, and all the brethren. <sup>22</sup> The Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Grace be with you. Amen.*

### **Detailed Outline Chapter 4: Preach the Word!**

- The Charge to Preach (4:1-2)
- The Need for Preaching (4:3-5)
- The Prize for Preaching (4:6-8)

- The Price for Preaching (4:9-22)

### Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

### **In Every Study**

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

Passage: 2 Timothy 4:9-13

Title: Precious People (Seeing Them and Being Them)

Summary: In our passage today, we have a listing of names, people who were precious to Paul, and had a special relationship with him. In each name there is a story.... And so too in every person God puts in our lives, they have a story that we get to be part of. Join us as we are reminded how precious people are, and how we are to see them, and be precious to them. Paul gives powerful and ultimate examples for us in our passage.

*2 Timothy 4:1-8 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> I charge you therefore before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, who will judge the living and the dead at His appearing and His kingdom: <sup>2</sup> Preach the word! Be ready in season and out of season. Convince, rebuke, exhort, with all longsuffering and teaching. <sup>3</sup> For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but according to their own desires, because they have itching ears, they will heap up for themselves teachers; <sup>4</sup> and they will turn their ears away from the truth, and be turned aside to fables. <sup>5</sup> But you be watchful in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, fulfill your ministry. <sup>6</sup> For I am already being poured out as a drink offering, and the time of my departure is at hand. <sup>7</sup> I have fought the good fight, I have finished the race, I have kept the faith. <sup>8</sup> Finally, there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, will give to me on that Day, and not to me only but also to all who have loved His appearing.

*2 Timothy 4:9-13 (NKJV)* <sup>9</sup> Be diligent to come to me quickly; <sup>10</sup> for Demas has forsaken me, having loved this present world, and has departed for Thessalonica—Crescens for Galatia, Titus for Dalmatia. <sup>11</sup> Only Luke is with me. Get Mark and bring him with you, for he is useful to me for ministry. <sup>12</sup> And Tychicus I have sent to Ephesus. <sup>13</sup> Bring the cloak that I left with Carpus at Troas when you come—and the books, especially the parchments.

People, for the Lord, it's all about people; therefore should it not be the same for us. What moves Your heart Lord; let it move my heart the same. Paul was in a prison, alone, abandoned by nearly all, yet Paul still saw people..... not steel bars and stone walls. Some of these people were drowning, some were merely treading water, yet Paul's heart for people (as the Lord's heart is), is to not be drowning or treading water, but like the Lord to be walking on water. Only by the Spirit infused Word of God can we, and we shall.... Walk on the waves of this world, rather than be buried under them.

Outline: Precious People (Seeing Them and Being Them) – 2 Timothy 4:9-13:

- Timothy Come Quickly – I Want to Look into Your Eyes (4:9)
- Demas has Departed for the World – Don't Quit on Them (4:10)
- Only Luke – The Power of Being the Only One (4:11)
- Get Mark – Investing in Others for Others to Reap From (4:11)
- Tychicus I Have Sent – Being Carriers of Manna From Heaven (4:12)
- Paul Calls for the Word – A Fire that Burns (4:13)

### Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV)* <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

### In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV)* <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

**Timothy Come Quickly – I Want to Look into Your Eyes (4:9)**  
**(2 Timothy 4:9 NKJV) Be diligent to come to me quickly;**

Verse nine. Paul says be diligent. It means do your best. Make haste. And we see down in verse 21, he's telling him come before winter and no doubt just because it's going to be cold and bring my cloak but because the travel may hinder him making it to Paul because of the sea route and the storms of the sea. That if he didn't make it by winter, he wouldn't make it at all or at least until spring, which Paul didn't think he had that much time to live.

*2 Timothy 4:21 (NKJV) <sup>21</sup> Do your utmost to come before winter. Eubulus greets you, as well as Pudens, Linus, Claudia, and all the brethren.*

Who might God be calling you to get to before their winter sets in, and they enter coldness and long dark nights?

Yes Paul wrote this to Timothy. Yes he said it to Timothy; He said, please come and see me..... and you know what, we see the relationship that was sweet between the two of them. Yes, Timothy. I love you. Yes, Timothy, I want a fellowship with you before I depart and pick up sail and head home to see the Lord. But I believe it's more so, as we see in verse 11, because of Timothy's usefulness to him in the ministry just like Mark is.

Timothy, I want to see you so I can look into your eyes and reiterate the things I have just written. I want you to hear my heart. I want you to see my eyes and hear my voice. I want you to hear me say "don't tap out, don't cut short your race, finish and finish well". Timothy, there's laid up for you a crown awaiting you but more so that He will place it on your head. Jesus will place the crown upon your head and I want you to know what that day will be like.

*2 Timothy 4:8 (NKJV) <sup>8</sup> Finally, there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, will give to me on that Day, and not to me only but also to all who have loved His appearing.*

Christian, Jesus will never miss an opportunity to look into your eyes. So you see his eyes, the passion, the love, the desire for you eye to eye. I love thinking of every moment as Jesus walked this earth. How did Jesus look into Peter's eyes on that resurrection Sunday when he met him, just He and Peter alone. Peter would know forgiveness, restoration, even after the rooster crowed three times. How did he look at Simon the Cyrene when he picked up the cross off of Jesus? Jesus would not have missed the opportunity to look into his eyes. Pick up your cross and follow me. How did his eyes, what was his voice on resurrection Sunday with Mary outside the empty tomb there in the garden?

*Luke 24:33-34 (NKJV) those who were with them gathered together, <sup>34</sup> saying, "The Lord is risen indeed, and has appeared to Simon!"*

*Matthew 27:32-33 (NKJV) <sup>32</sup> Now as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name. Him they compelled to bear His cross. <sup>33</sup> And when they had come to a place called Golgotha, that is to say, Place of a Skull,*

*John 20:11-16 (NKJV) <sup>11</sup> But Mary stood outside by the tomb weeping, and as she wept she stooped down and looked into the tomb. <sup>12</sup> And she saw two angels in white sitting, one at the head and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain. <sup>13</sup> Then they said to her, "Woman, why are you weeping?" She said to them, "Because they have taken away my Lord, and I do not know where they have laid Him." <sup>14</sup> Now when she had said this, she turned around and saw Jesus standing there, and did not know that it was Jesus. <sup>15</sup> Jesus said to her, "Woman, why are you weeping? Whom are you seeking?" She, supposing Him to be the gardener, said to Him, "Sir, if You have carried Him away, tell me where You have laid Him, and I will take Him away." <sup>16</sup> Jesus said to her, "Mary!" She turned and said to Him, "Rabboni!" (which is to say, Teacher).*

Oh, the beauty of those moments. Jesus, looking into the eyes of those that he loved. I can't wait for that moment that his eyes look into mine, to hear his voice and that touch, for you and I when he puts this wreath upon our head. And I will be so, so glad when that day comes as I look back at him and into his eyes, that I didn't quit, that I didn't tap out. I didn't cut short my race.

Paul wants to look into Timothy's eyes, have him hear his voice, feel his touch upon his shoulder and say, Timothy, listen. I want you to hear this my son in the faith.

It's an imperishable crown. It's not the crowns that the world gives that perish and fade. First Corinthians 9:25. It's an imperishable crown that will never be taken away.

*1 Corinthians 9:24–25 (NKJV)* <sup>24</sup> Do you not know that those who run in a race all run, but one receives the prize? Run in such a way that you may obtain it. <sup>25</sup> And everyone who competes for the prize is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a perishable crown, but we for an imperishable crown.

So again for you and for I, don't tap out. But you know, maybe this day, maybe this week, maybe this holiday gathering will be your place to say, "Hey, I really want to see you. I really want to talk to you. I want you to hear this as you, like Paul, look in their eyes, put your hands upon their shoulders with a voice of passion and surety, say, fight the good fight. There's a crown laid up for you."

### Demas has Departed for the World – Don't Quit on Them (4:10)

**(2 Timothy 4:10 NKJV) for Demas has forsaken me, having loved this present world, and has departed for Thessalonica; Crescens for Galatia, Titus for Dalmatia.**

Verse 10. Demas, he's mentioned in the other prison epistles. He's mentioned in Philemon verse 24. Colossians chapter 4:14, both of those epistles written around 62 A.D. So we know that Demas was with Paul that long at least. This writing here of Timothy is written somewhere some think as early as 64 A.D., others as late as 67 A.D., so we're talking somewhere three to five years later.

*Colossians 4:14 (NKJV)* <sup>14</sup> Luke the beloved physician and Demas greet you.

*Philemon 24 (NKJV)* <sup>24</sup> as do Mark, Aristarchus, Demas, Luke, my fellow laborers.

So Demas lasted through the first imprisonment but somewhere along the way he left during this imprisonment.

He left for this present and that word it means the present age, era, life and there's a two-fold here. Paul was making reference to this life on earth being temporal compared to a life with the Lord that's eternal.

For context, Demas has forsaken Paul. Doesn't say that he's forsaken the faith. I don't know what verse 8 where it says everyone who loves his appearing looks like for the Demas' of Christianity.

He left for the love (Greek=agape, unconditional), full-on love of the world. Paul makes the point that he's in Thessalonica which is modern Greece. It's a beautiful Mediterranean location. It's a beautiful place that we can say he left for a life of ease. That Demas came to a place and he says let someone else fight. I'm done. I've been doing this for five years. I'm out of here. I'm tapping out. I'm pulling out of the race.

I know how I want to finish and I know whose eyes I want to look into and hear well done. And I think you do too..... oh Demas was it worth it?

Regarding Paul and Demas we know, for as Paul wrote Timothy, same heart that he has for Demas,

- Paul would've prayed for Demas.
- Paul would've disciplined Demas.
- Paul would've modeled the soldier, the athlete and the farmer.
- Paul would've invested and loved Demas.

Yet he left not just for the world, but deserted Paul. He abandoned Paul in Paul's greatest need and after all Paul invested in him.

*2 Timothy 2:1–7 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> You therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. <sup>2</sup> And the things that you have heard from me among many witnesses, commit these to faithful men who will be able to teach others also. <sup>3</sup> You therefore must endure hardship as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. <sup>4</sup> No one engaged in warfare entangles himself with the affairs of this life, that he may please him who enlisted him as a soldier. <sup>5</sup> And also if anyone competes in athletics, he is not crowned unless he competes according to the rules. <sup>6</sup> The hardworking farmer must be first to partake of the crops. <sup>7</sup> Consider what I say, and may the Lord give you understanding in all things.

How heartbreaking for Paul and every person here who has done the same for a Demas in their life. And let me share with you a couple keys for all of us. First is even if they quit on you, don't quit on them regardless how hurtful or heartbreaking it may be. Jesus is our ultimate example in ministry to everyone. Jesus, it says at the Last Supper, having loved them to the end, even Judas, even the others, 11, who will scatter at the cross. Jesus loved them to the end. Continually leave the door open to meet them on the lake, the Sea of Galilee as we see that Jesus would do with those that abandoned him. As I said, as we have studied, we're not to tap out on Jesus. May I also say we can't tap out on them. We need to love them to the end.

*John 13:1 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> Now before the Feast of the Passover, when Jesus knew that His hour had come that He should depart from this world to the Father, having loved His own who were in the world, He loved them to the end.

And secondly know this, Demas' do leave but in verse 11 Paul's going to say, bring me Mark. He's useful to me. And so maybe God's speaking to someone today. You'll be the Mark, the replacement for a Demas who leaves their watch and their post for the present world.

*2 Timothy 4:11 (NKJV)* <sup>11</sup> Only Luke is with me. Get Mark and bring him with you, for he is useful to me for ministry.

God will enable and equip the available. All we have to be is available, but while we're waiting as we've studied, study to show thyself approved and you'll be equipped.

For any who may be ready to head to Thessalonica like Demas, it's not worth it. You will become a shell of who you are. Why you are great? Because you serve the living Lord.

And dads and moms know this, just like Abraham, your children will follow you to Gerar (it was a border town between Promised Land and the World) and they'll do the same thing that you're doing so you stay and set the example.

*Genesis 20:1–2 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> And Abraham journeyed from there to the South, and dwelt between Kadesh and Shur, and stayed in Gerar. <sup>2</sup> Now Abraham said of Sarah his wife, "She is my sister." And Abimelech king of Gerar sent and took Sarah.

*Genesis 26:1–3 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> There was a famine in the land, besides the first famine that was in the days of Abraham. And Isaac went to Abimelech king of the Philistines, in Gerar. <sup>2</sup> Then the LORD appeared to him and said: "Do not go down to Egypt; live in the land of which I shall tell you. <sup>3</sup> Dwell in this land, and I will be with you and bless you; for to you and your descendants I give all these lands, and I will perform the oath which I swore to Abraham your father.

*Genesis 26:6–7 (NKJV)* <sup>6</sup> So Isaac dwelt in Gerar. <sup>7</sup> And the men of the place asked about his wife. And he said, "She is my sister"; for he was afraid to say, "She is my wife," because he thought, "lest the men of the place kill me for Rebekah, because she is beautiful to behold."

What we read in Hebrews, the hall of fame of faith, you'll read not one of them went to Thessalonica, not one of them departed. They all stayed and finished the course. None of them tapped out.

*Hebrews 11:1 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.

*Hebrews 11:6 (NKJV)* <sup>6</sup> But without faith *it is* impossible to please *Him*, for he who comes to God must believe that He is, and *that* He is a rewarder of those who diligently seek Him.

*Hebrews 11:13–14 (NKJV)* <sup>13</sup> These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off were assured of them, embraced *them* and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth. <sup>14</sup> For those who say such things declare plainly that they seek a homeland.

But as for Demas, he chose the greatness of the world. But you can ask Moses, he had the best the world could offer but he decided that the worst the Lord would offer is still way better than the best that the world can offer.

*Hebrews 11:24–27 (NKJV)* <sup>24</sup> By faith Moses, when he became of age, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter, <sup>25</sup> choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God than to enjoy the passing pleasures of sin, <sup>26</sup> esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt; for he looked to the reward. <sup>27</sup> By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king; for he endured as seeing Him who is invisible.

I wonder because Paul mentions Thessalonica and we know that that church was planted in Thessalonica on Paul's second missionary journey (around 49-52AD). He wrote a letter to that church around 52 A.D. It's a well-established church of 15 years now. I wonder if Demas went to

church there and walked in and says, "I'm fine. I'm just taking a break." But Paul knew his heart. Paul knew where his heart was. Maybe Demas might have deceived himself, but Paul saw through it.

What does that verse eight crown look like when He puts that on our head? I don't know, and don't want to know for myself personally. I don't think we'll even see the wreath or the crown. All we'll see is his eyes. And we'll get to look into those eyes and we'll get to kiss the face of our God Almighty.

Here it says Crescens, he isn't with Paul. We're not exactly sure why. Doesn't appear that he departed. He's just maybe sent for to go do work in Galatia. And then it says Titus, he's in Dalmatia. And so I think we can see that Titus, he left for ministry and we see that Titus was with Paul in 2nd Corinthians 8:16. That was written around 57 A.D. so that's about 10 years prior. And he's mentioned in Titus 1:4 and that's written about 62 A.D, so about five-year prior, and thus we see this relationship with Titus and Paul.

*2 Corinthians 8:16 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> But thanks be to God who puts the same earnest care for you into the heart of Titus.*

*Titus 1:4 (NKJV) <sup>4</sup> To Titus, a true son in our common faith: Grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ our Savior.*

### **Only Luke – The Power of Being the Only One (4:11)**

**(2 Timothy 4:11 NKJV) Only Luke is with me. Get Mark and bring him with you, for he is useful to me for ministry.**

Verse 11. Only Luke is with me. This is Dr. Luke. He's faithful, Luke. It's been written and recorded that for anyone to travel with a prisoner in the Roman Empire, only a slave could do that. So it's quite possible that Luke is continually with Paul through all these imprisonments because he made himself a slave to Paul. That's something pretty amazing to consider that that's what he would do for the sake of Paul and the ministry.

However Luke chose, consider Luke's legacy. What an amazing legacy. His legacy is only, what a legacy he stood with Paul till the end, picture of Christ.

Who will you be an "only" to? When all others leave them.

Luke is mentioned in Colossians 4:14 as the beloved physician. He's mentioned in Philemon 24 as a fellow laborer, the same reference as Demas. Again written around 62 A.D., Colossians and Philemon. And so here we are four to five years later, Luke's still standing there.

*Colossians 4:14 (NKJV) <sup>14</sup> Luke the beloved physician and Demas greet you.*

*Philemon 24 (NKJV) <sup>24</sup> as do Mark, Aristarchus, Demas, Luke, my fellow laborers.*

What happened to Demas? Had a father in Paul, had a brother in Luke and then he still chose the world. Bailed out from the ministry. Sad to say what happened, but actually, I don't know who I feel sorrier for, Paul that Demas deserted him or Demas that he walked away from Paul and a friendship that he had with Luke to a place, Thessalonica, where he would never have a Paul and a Luke in his life. A brother in Luke, a father in Paul. And he would miss all the spiritual depths and greatness.

Imagine breaking bread with Paul, hear in his heart an apostle speaking and praying with him and for him.

But Christian, don't be angry with them. The Demas' you know, feel sorry for them. They will only become a shell. The spiritual depth they once were. It's truly sorrow when one who once walked with us walks back to the cares of the world.

### **Get Mark – Investing in Others for Others to Reap From (4:11)**

**(2 Timothy 4:11 NKJV) Only Luke is with me. Get Mark and bring him with you, for he is useful to me for ministry.**

Barnabas invested in Mark, and Paul is reaping what Barnabas invested as we read in Acts 15. Paul didn't want to take a chance, but Barnabas did. But I think Barnabas gives us all a great picture. He was willing to take a chance on young Mark and it paid off. And again, Paul's reaping from what he was willing to take a chance on so maybe that's a calling for someone here today to take a chance on a young Mark and invest in them.

*(Acts 15:36 NKJV) Then after some days Paul said to Barnabas, "Let us now go back and visit our brethren in every city where we have preached the word of the Lord, and see how they are doing."*

*(Acts 15:37 NKJV) Now Barnabas was determined to take with them John called Mark.*

*(Acts 15:38 NKJV) But Paul insisted that they should not take with them the one who had departed from them in Pamphylia, and had not gone with them to the work.*

*(Acts 15:39 NKJV) Then the contention became so sharp that they parted from one another. And so Barnabas took Mark and sailed to Cyprus;*

May I say, don't be influenced by others' opinions and critics of others because Paul didn't want nothing to do with Mark, but Barnabas wasn't swayed by that influence even if it was the great apostle Paul. But what we see at the moment, Paul had a vision for the work. Barnabas had a vision for the individual and sometimes the two don't meet. And I think we just have to recognize that and not let that become something of the vision but let it become something that we accept. You're investing in an individual. I'm going to invest in the ministry right now because that's what God's called me to do.

By the way, Mark's listed in Colossians 4:10 and Philemon 24. So once again, here we see this connecting all these men, Luke, Demas and Mark, and it can only make us go, what happened to you, Demas? How did you have such great brotherhood and that you walked away for this present age and the love of it?

*Colossians 4:10 (NKJV) <sup>10</sup> Aristarchus my fellow prisoner greets you, with Mark the cousin of Barnabas (about whom you received instructions: if he comes to you, welcome him),*

*Colossians 4:14 (NKJV) <sup>14</sup> Luke the beloved physician and Demas greet you.*

*Philemon 24 (NKJV) <sup>24</sup> as do Mark, Aristarchus, Demas, Luke, my fellow laborers.*

### **Tychicus I Have Sent – Being Carriers of Manna From Heaven (4:12)**

**(2 Timothy 4:12 NKJV) And Tychicus I have sent to Ephesus.**

Verse 12. Tychicus, we know he carried at least two epistles as we read in Ephesians 6:21 and Colossians 4:7-8. Maybe even Titus, as we read in chapter three verse 12, and maybe this letter to Timothy who was in Ephesus at the time of this writing.

*Ephesians 6:21 (NKJV) <sup>21</sup> But that you also may know my affairs and how I am doing, Tychicus, a beloved brother and faithful minister in the Lord, will make all things known to you;*

*Colossians 4:7–8 (NKJV) <sup>7</sup> Tychicus, a beloved brother, faithful minister, and fellow servant in the Lord, will tell you all the news about me. <sup>8</sup> I am sending him to you for this very purpose, that he may know your circumstances and comfort your hearts,*

*Titus 3:12 (NKJV) <sup>12</sup> When I send Artemas to you, or Tychicus, be diligent to come to me at Nicopolis, for I have decided to spend the winter there.*

*1 Timothy 1:3 (NKJV) <sup>3</sup> As I urged you when I went into Macedonia—remain in Ephesus that you may charge some that they teach no other doctrine,*

I want you to see the Lord. I want you to serve the Lord, but maybe you say, I don't feel gifted. Well first pray to be used and you will. But don't over complicate it either. Can you deliver a letter for me? Paul would say to Tychicus. Yeah, I can do that. Anybody can do that. Oh, well this just isn't any letter. It's my heart to the next generation. It's my last will and testimony. And he entrusted to not just anybody, but probably entrusted it to Tychicus like he did with a letter to Titus and the church in Ephesus and Colossae.

Some teach. Yes. Some evangelize. Some get the call to make a long walks through thieves and robbers, lions and devils. Tychicus would have had to get on a ship. He'd have been sleeping outside just to deliver a letter. And if he would ever say, it's just a letter, every one of us here today would go, far be it. It's more than just a letter. It's manna from heaven to us. Thank you for your faithfulness. And that might be your calling. Don't miss what God may put before you that others thinks is nothing when it turns out to be manna from heaven.

### **Paul Calls for the Word – A Fire that Burns (4:13)**

**(2 Timothy 4:13 NKJV) Bring the cloak that I left with Carpus at Troas when you come; and the books, especially the parchments.**

So we see it says, bring my cloak, as he speaks to Timothy. Paul's not rich. Paul doesn't have a handful of cloaks, heavy blankets, heavy jackets laying around. He knows where his one was left. And he's asking Timothy to pick it up on the way and bring it to him. And may we be sensitive to the needs of those who are in need in our lives.

*Matthew 25:34–40 (NKJV)* <sup>34</sup> Then the King will say to those on His right hand, 'Come, you blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: <sup>35</sup> for I was hungry and you gave Me food; I was thirsty and you gave Me drink; I was a stranger and you took Me in; <sup>36</sup> I was naked and you clothed Me; I was sick and you visited Me; I was in prison and you came to Me.' <sup>37</sup> "Then the righteous will answer Him, saying, 'Lord, when did we see You hungry and feed You, or thirsty and give You drink? <sup>38</sup> When did we see You a stranger and take You in, or naked and clothe You? <sup>39</sup> Or when did we see You sick, or in prison, and come to You?' <sup>40</sup> And the King will answer and say to them, 'Assuredly, I say to you, inasmuch as you did it to one of the least of these My brethren, you did it to Me.'

Bring my coat, it is dark and damp in this dungeon. But it isn't dark enough or cold enough to keep me from wanting to soak in the word. Books and parchments no doubt refer to the Old Testament and the gospels. Paul still wanted to study even though he knew his days were limited. Paul knew encouragement and strength came when he opened the word....you need to know that too.

You will know what a man's passion is by what he does when he doesn't have to do anything. Paul didn't have to do anything, the end was near, but he still wanted to study the word.

I pray a burning in your heart for the word of God. As we see Luke 24, did not our hearts burn within us? And if you want more faith and I want more faith, this is why we do what we do. Romans 10:17. Faith comes by hearing and hearing by the word of God. The fire of the word burning away. It's a refiner. Fire yet warms and touching fire touches us where we can literally feel it and be warmed by it and know its presence because the word of God comes with the presence of God himself.

*Romans 10:16–17 (NKJV)* <sup>16</sup> But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Isaiah says, "LORD, who has believed our report?" <sup>17</sup> So then faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

*Luke 24:30–32 (NKJV)* <sup>30</sup> Now it came to pass, as He sat at the table with them, that He took bread, blessed and broke it, and gave it to them. <sup>31</sup> Then their eyes were opened and they knew Him; and He vanished from their sight. <sup>32</sup> And they said to one another, "Did not our heart burn within us while He talked with us on the road, and while He opened the Scriptures to us?"

### **Outline: Precious People (Seeing Them and Being Them) – 2 Timothy 4:9-13:**

- Timothy Come Quickly – I Want to Look into Your Eyes (4:9)
- Demas has Departed for the World – Don't Quit on Them (4:10)
- Only Luke – The Power of Being the Only One (4:11)
- Get Mark – Investing in Others for Others to Reap From (4:11)
- Tychicus I Have Sent – Being Carriers of Manna From Heaven (4:12)
- Paul Calls for the Word – A Fire that Burns (4:13)

## Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

## **In Every Study**

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

Passage: 2 Timothy 4:14-22

Title: The Lord Stood by Me

Summary: In our passage today the apostle Paul will say, "But the Lord stood by me and strengthened me". Join us as we see the promise to Paul is the same promise to us, and how this promise greatly reflects the heart of God in a deep personal way to each of us.

*2 Timothy 4:14–22 (NKJV)* <sup>14</sup> Alexander the coppersmith did me much harm. May the Lord repay him according to his works. <sup>15</sup> You also must beware of him, for he has greatly resisted our words. <sup>16</sup> At my first defense no one stood with me, but all forsook me. May it not be charged against them. <sup>17</sup> But the Lord stood with me and strengthened me, so that the message might be preached fully through me, and that all the Gentiles might hear. Also I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion. <sup>18</sup> And the Lord will deliver me from every evil work and preserve me for His heavenly kingdom. To Him be glory forever and ever. Amen! <sup>19</sup> Greet Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus. <sup>20</sup> Erastus stayed in Corinth, but Trophimus I have left in Miletus sick. <sup>21</sup> Do your utmost to come before winter. Eubulus greets you, as well as Pudens, Linus, Claudia, and all the brethren. <sup>22</sup> The Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Grace be with you. Amen.

Outline - The Lord Stood by Me:

- When Others Came Against Me (4:14-15)
- When I Was All Alone (4:16-17)
- When I Needed a Savior (4:18)
- Because It Is All About Grace – His Grace (4:19-22)

### Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV)* <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

### In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV)* <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

### The Lord Stood by Me: When Others Came Against Me (4:14-15)

**(2 Timothy 4:14 NKJV) Alexander the coppersmith did me much harm. May the Lord repay him according to his works.**

**(2 Timothy 4:15 NKJV) You also must beware of him, for he has greatly resisted our words.**

When others came against Paul, and you, we see God stood, and stands, with Paul, and you.

Verse 14 and 15. Alexander the coppersmith is possibly mentioned in 1 Timothy 1, verse 20, as he speaks of a man named Alexander, who blasphemed and was turned over to Satan to learn not to blaspheme. We see correlation here with our verse 15, blasphemy and here greatly resisting the word. And both of them insult the holiness of God and the nature and character of God. I don't believe there's a verse or a word of God better said that when we challenge it and resist it, that it's not an insult to the holiness of God, because we're literally saying, "I reject your wisdom. And I also reject your purity and holiness."

*1 Timothy 1:18–20 (NKJV)* <sup>18</sup> This charge I commit to you, son Timothy, according to the prophecies previously made concerning you, that by them you may wage the good warfare, <sup>19</sup> having faith and a good conscience, which some having rejected, concerning the faith have suffered shipwreck, <sup>20</sup> of whom are Hymenaeus and Alexander, whom I delivered to Satan that they may learn not to blaspheme.

But notice the context back in first Timothy 1, chapter one, verse 18-20. Again, we see wage a good warfare. So here we see again, the continual theme of the soldier analogy. Paul continually

weaves these analogies (soldier – athlete -farmer) into the context of difficulties, because walking and serving the Lord is difficult, people will come against us, the devil will be lurking like a roaring lion, because it is all about people..... reaching them with the Gospel. But some, don't want the Gospel, they want the present world, and Satan will use them to come against the work of the Gospel.

*2 Timothy 2:3-6 (NKJV) <sup>3</sup> You therefore must endure hardship as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. <sup>4</sup> No one engaged in warfare entangles himself with the affairs of this life, that he may please him who enlisted him as a soldier. <sup>5</sup> And also if anyone competes in athletics, he is not crowned unless he competes according to the rules. <sup>6</sup> The hardworking farmer must be first to partake of the crops.*

And as you look at verse 16, there's possibly a tie-in here that we're not actually transitioning into a new thought, but we're already into the new thought of transitioning here. Speaking of Alexander, the coppersmith. And what I mean by that is that, speaking of Paul's first trial, that possibly Alexander the coppersmith testified against Paul with blasphemous lying words that resisted the truth of Paul's word that he was preaching.

*2 Timothy 4:16 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> At my first defense no one stood with me, but all forsook me. May it not be charged against them.*

Now notice, Paul said the Lord repay him. Not Paul repay him, not Timothy repay him for me since I'm in prison. No. Paul did not see that his role was the role of repayment, because repayment is judgment that seeks payment. Eye for an eye, tooth for a tooth. But Paul does say to Timothy, "Be aware of him. I'm not seeking payment, but I am sending protection. Don't let him into your circle. He hurts people. And so you need to protect the people and yourself from him." And here we see there's a place for that in the church, to call out by name those who hurt the church.

Christian, don't get into the repayment business, else you be consumed by it. I know people, all appearances of being believers, who spend their whole life seeking "repayment" (aka – revenge) upon those that hurt them, and what I see is they never go deeper in Christ and the spiritual things, rather they only go deeper in fleshly things, and become more carnally minded.

Verse 14-15. Alexander Coppersmith, words don't phase or consume Paul. And Job's three great counselors, they get Job into a cycle of frustration with them, and he gets frustrated with God. Job was upset with man. But they were not spiritual words. They were foolish, presumptuous words. Christian, you don't have to respond to foolish words of man, else you will find yourself getting spun up with them, yourself, and God personally, God the Lord. Simply ask, "Is there any truth here?" And if, yes, that may apply. But if no, let them not stick to me.

*Job 13:1-5 (NKJV) <sup>1</sup> "Behold, my eye has seen all this, My ear has heard and understood it. <sup>2</sup> What you know, I also know; I am not inferior to you. <sup>3</sup> But I would speak to the Almighty, And I desire to reason with God. <sup>4</sup> But you forgers of lies, You are all worthless physicians. <sup>5</sup> Oh, that you would be silent, And it would be your wisdom!*

### **The Lord Stood by Me: When I Was All Alone (4:16-17)**

**(2 Timothy 4:16 NKJV) At my first defense no one stood with me, but all forsook me. May it not be charged against them.**

**(2 Timothy 4:17 NKJV) But the Lord stood with me and strengthened me, so that the message might be preached fully through me, and that all the Gentiles might hear. And I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion.**

**(2 Timothy 4:18 NKJV) And the Lord will deliver me from every evil work and preserve me for His heavenly kingdom. To Him be glory forever and ever. Amen!**

So we read in this section, as people came against Paul, as people left Paul, and Paul was isolated, the Lord stood beside Paul, and so too will He stand next to us, even if all forsake us.

You know how, when we go through hard times, we wonder if we're being judged because we're in sin that's unconfessed or unrecognized, or a situation we're in is that God is judging us for something wrong in our lives that we don't recognize? I give thanks to the Lord that He reveals things such as this for us, because Paul gives us an example and such a great answer for all of us. As in, do you notice Paul never struggled with if he was in sin, if all the ills and situations that he was in was God judging him, or he was in some type of unrepentant sin? As we read Paul, we

read total confidence. We don't read doubt. We don't read questioning. We don't read bad theology. We read a man who was sure that he was sure.

What we read of Paul are keys to being a soldier and athlete and a farmer, things that we must be sure that we're sure of, that we can't live in the washing machine of doubt, the ups and downs of the questioning, if there's something that's undealt with. And Paul gives us a key, and I'll give you three of those keys, of why Paul could be sure that he was sure, that he didn't struggle if he was in some type of condemnation by the Lord, because he was imprisoned, and he was in such extreme situation as he was.

*First, Paul had a word he was standing on.* God had given him a word that he was chosen. God had given him a prophetic word that he would suffer many hard things for his name. And Paul stood on that word, and it gave him strength when the hard time came upon him. And how important it is for us to have a word to stand on before we make life decisions, before we're in the midst of a circumstance that can leave us questioning and wandering.

2 Timothy, 1:1. Paul, an apostle by the will of God

*2 Timothy 1:1 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, according to the promise of life which is in Christ Jesus,

*Acts 9:15–16 (NKJV)* <sup>15</sup> But the Lord said to him, "Go, for he is a chosen vessel of Mine to bear My name before Gentiles, kings, and the children of Israel. <sup>16</sup> For I will show him how many things he must suffer for My name's sake."

*Secondly, Paul knew the nature and heart of his God.* He knew that God was good. He knew that God loved him. He knew that God stood with him as we study today, that he never stood alone. And so important for us to just sit and be still. That's even being still from all the noise. We should have a time of worship in our daily prayer time. We should have a time of the word in our daily prayer time. We should have a time of praying and interceding for others, and praying and putting petitions before God regarding ourselves. But so vital that we just have a time of waiting on the Lord, being quiet and being still. And Psalm 46:10, applying, "Be still and know that I am God."  
*Psalm 46:10 (NKJV)* <sup>10</sup> Be still, and know that I am God; I will be exalted among the nations, I will be exalted in the earth!

2 Timothy, 2:11-13. He knows God's faithfulness.

*2 Timothy 2:11–13 (NKJV)* <sup>11</sup> This is a faithful saying: For if we died with Him, We shall also live with Him. <sup>12</sup> If we endure, We shall also reign with Him. If we deny Him, He also will deny us. <sup>13</sup> If we are faithless, He remains faithful; He cannot deny Himself.

*Thirdly, Paul examined his heart daily,* and he did this through the word that he had a passion for. As we ended last week with him saying, "When you come, bring the parchments. Bring the scriptures, that I might study that word." It was his passion. And he used that word to examine his heart. He used that word to keep him right with the Lord, because the Bible says that the word of God is a cleansing agent. How can a man cleanse his ways, we're told Psalm 119:9, through the word of God. And it's so important that every day we're in the word, and whatever word we're in, we're not using Bible roulette, but we're systematically going through the scriptures in morning devotion, in our personal Bible studies, in our Sunday messages and the various other Bible studies that we take part of. And we take that word and we read it. And what Psalm 139, verse 27 and 28, we ask the Lord to search our heart and to try us, to let us know if there's any wicked way within us.

*Psalm 119:9 (NKJV)* <sup>9</sup> How can a young man cleanse his way? By taking heed according to Your word.

*Psalm 139:23–24 (NKJV)* <sup>23</sup> Search me, O God, and know my heart; Try me, and know my anxieties; <sup>24</sup> And see if there is any wicked way in me, And lead me in the way everlasting.

2 Timothy, 1:3. Paul had a pure conscience with knowledge, the mirror of the word

*2 Timothy 1:3 (NKJV)* <sup>3</sup> I thank God, whom I serve with a pure conscience, as my forefathers did, as without ceasing I remember you in my prayers night and day,

Now before moving on, a word about chapter two, verse 11-13. See the italics there? Because it's quoting that, "Hey, this is a faithful saying," and most scholars agree that this was actually a psalm, a hymn, lines from a psalm, a hymn from the early church.

*2 Timothy 2:11-13 (NKJV) <sup>11</sup> This is a faithful saying: For if we died with Him, We shall also live with Him. <sup>12</sup> If we endure, We shall also reign with Him. If we deny Him, He also will deny us. <sup>13</sup> If we are faithless, He remains faithful; He cannot deny Himself.*

I want you to think about something and consider something with me as we, say, pick a worship song, any song, but let's pick this one that's rather popular on the radio says, I love your voice. Mercies are new. Goes on to say all my life you've been faithful. And then the lyrics say, you're your goodness is running after me, running after me. Beautiful worship song that we would sing.

*Your Goodness –*

*I love You, Lord*

*For Your mercy never fails me*

*All my days, I've been held in Your hands*

*From the moment that I wake up*

*Until I lay my head*

*Oh, I will sing of the goodness of God*

*And all my life You have been faithful*

*And all my life You have been so, so good*

*With every breath that I am able*

*Oh, I will sing of the goodness of God*

*I love Your voice*

*You have led me through the fire*

*In the darkest night*

*You are close like no other*

*I've known You as a Father*

*I've known You as a Friend*

*And I have lived in the goodness of God (yeah)*

*And all my life You have been faithful (oh)*

*And all my life You have been so, so good*

*With every breath that I am able*

*Oh, I will sing of the goodness of God (yeah)*

*'Cause Your goodness is running after*

*It's running after me*

*Your goodness is running after*

*It's running after me*

*With my life laid down*

*I'm surrendered now*

*I give You everything*

*'Cause Your goodness is running after*

*It's running after me (oh-oh)*

And if we were singing it right now, we'd all be saying, it's beautiful. It's awesome. And I want you to consider if we were singing this song from chapter two, verse 11, verse 11, we'd say, "Oh, this is awesome." Verse 13. We'd be saying, "Yay. He's so faithful." Verse 12, we'd be lifting up the first half of that line. We'd be lifting up holy hands, praising him. But then we'd come to verse 12 and the second half of it and we'd say, "What are we doing here? What kind of worship song is this? We deny him. He will deny us. Sing that. Yeah. Imagine singing that song here as a worship song. Oh yeah. If we deny him, he'll deny us. Boy, that's going to be a bad day if we deny him." But they did. They did. That was part of their worship song.

*2 Timothy 2:11-13 (NKJV) <sup>11</sup> This is a faithful saying: For if we died with Him, We shall also live with Him. <sup>12</sup> If we endure, We shall also reign with Him. If we deny Him, He also will deny us. <sup>13</sup> If we are faithless, He remains faithful; He cannot deny Himself.*

See, as we talk about Paul examining his heart, the early church sang a song to examine their heart, to ask themselves, is this emotion or devotion? Devotion means devoted to him because Matthew 10:32 says, if we confess him before man, he'll confess us before his father in heaven. But if we deny him before man, he'll deny us before our father in heaven. And I think there is a danger, in many ways of worship, that can be so emotional. But then the person puts down the song sheet or walks away from the guitar. And there's no devotion to the Lord, no faithfulness to

his word. It was more emotion with song rather than devotion with heart. **The early church, they examined their heart during worship.** That's a pretty amazing thought.

*Matthew 10:32-33 (NKJV)* <sup>32</sup> "Therefore whoever confesses Me before men, him I will also confess before My Father who is in heaven. <sup>33</sup> But whoever denies Me before men, him I will also deny before My Father who is in heaven.

**(2 Timothy 4:16 NKJV) At my first defense no one stood with me, but all forsook me. May it not be charged against them.**

Here ya go, a word of POWER! This is a POWER Verse

Verse 16. Paul's just like his Jesus. Father, forgive them. They know not what they do. But then there comes a place that I might add, because many people will claim that word of Jesus, father, forgive them. They know not what they do.

*Luke 23:34 (NKJV)* <sup>34</sup> Then Jesus said, "Father, forgive them, for they do not know what they do." And they divided His garments and cast lots.

But there's a place where once ignorance is revealed, then what is revealed must be done. A person can be unaware of something because they're blinded in some way. But once the revelation comes, then along with that comes the accountability to what has been spoken. We see that in Act 17:30, as Paul would preach to those in Athens. What you did, you did in ignorance. But now all men, the calling, the requirement to repent before the Lord, because Paul's now making them accountable, because he's giving them the word of God.

*Acts 17:30-31 (NKJV)* <sup>30</sup> Truly, these times of ignorance God overlooked, but now commands all men everywhere to repent, <sup>31</sup> because He has appointed a day on which He will judge the world in righteousness by the Man whom He has ordained. He has given assurance of this to all by raising Him from the dead."

Every time we give the word and people come here and hear it, they become accountable to it. They can no longer be ignorant to it. But I think there's a place that any that would say, "Well, then I'm just going to stay away from churches so I'm not accountable to anything." Then people will become accountable to that, because the Spirit's telling them, "You need to come and hear the word of God." So there's no escape from that. God is seeking and reaching out to every man. And here we come into a Christmas season where he shouts it from the mountain top and tells us, go tell it on the mountain, over the hills and everywhere.

- I believe there's a place, absolutely, those who aborted their baby, not of ignorance, unaware, but now they come. I believe there's an accountability to that. And what I mean by that is God says, "I forgive you. I love you. You're my child. Male and female involvement. But now that your eyes have been awakened, and the forgiveness had been had, I do have an accountability to you, that now you know, you need to go become one of the protector of the innocent. And one of the protector of the vulnerable."
- Then there is divorce. Christians get divorced in ignorance because the church didn't teach or the church promoted it or supported it, but now they come to a church that speaks and teaches the word of God and says not so quick, not so easy. Divorce has very limited reasons, according to the word of God, and for you now, you know the word of God. And God says you aren't going to get this divorce. It's not quick and easy because you don't feel like it. You're now accountable to the word of God that has been spoken to you. And so you're going to stay and you're going to fight for your marriage, and you're going to endure, and you're going to pray, and you're going to die to yourself and you're going to make this marriage be a treasure and a trophy before the world, of what God can do. If your situation has no foundation for a biblical divorce.
- And so too with sin things that we can all do, there's a time that God will overlook, father, forgive them. They know not what they do. When the word of God is revealed, then the accountability follows, and he expects us to respond according to what he has declared for us to do.

Here ya go, a word of POWER! This is a POWER Verse – because God says I forgive you for that, and don't live in the shadows of it, and now go out and rescue people from it, tell them, God's ways are better.

**(2 Timothy 4:17 NKJV) But the Lord stood with me and strengthened me, so that the message might be preached fully through me, and that all the Gentiles might hear. And I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion.**

People didn't stand by me, but something wonderful happened when they all left me, the Lord showed up. You see it is so often that when people leave us, that we can see the Lord's presence. In our darkest hours, had others have been there for us, we may have turned to them, rather than turning to the Lord, and we would have missed that sweet time of fellowship with Him.

*v. 17 And I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion* - some say and believe that Paul was taken to the coliseum to be devoured by a lion, but like Daniel, the lion couldn't attack. Maybe so, can't find anything to support that, so most likely Paul was referencing Satan,  
*(1 Peter 5:8 NKJV) Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil walks about like a roaring lion, seeking whom he may devour.*

Verse 17, we read back in Acts 28 that Paul was under house arrest and he had been under house arrest at least for two years. Then the Book of Acts ends and we only can go with what we hear and read from two church, fathers in church, history, and even in many ways, church tradition. And that is that Paul was released. He was not killed at the first imprisonment. He did go on as he said that he desired, there in various epistles, to go see people, to do another missionary journey. But then as we have studied, somewhere around 64 AD, after Paul was released, after he had stood before Nero, that Nero burned Rome, blamed it on the Christians. Now there's hatred towards the Christians and who was one of the chief figureheads of the Christian Church but Paul, and so pieced together by church fathers that Paul was rearrested by Nero. Many think it's because Nero lost his mind after hearing the word of God preached by Paul because Paul would never miss the opportunity to preach to Nero. Nero is now accountable for what he hears and he don't want to hear it because he thinks he's God, and so he is going to silence the messenger Paul. And so Paul's rearrested, he's brought back to Rome, and this is where we are at this moment.

Verse 17. Jesus stood beside Paul before his first defense, which appears to be sometime after Acts 28, again. Yet, we know from Acts 23, Paul, with trumped-up charges, a plot to kill him by the Jewish countrymen, says that, "The Lord stood by me," in Acts 23. Now, his first trial, he's telling us the Lord stood by him. That'd be Acts 29, if you know what I mean, because Acts ends with 28 chapters. And Paul says he will too, again, and that's for us, 2 Timothy 5, if you know what I mean.

*Acts 23:11 (NKJV) <sup>11</sup> But the following night the Lord stood by him and said, "Be of good cheer, Paul; for as you have testified for Me in Jerusalem, so you must also bear witness at Rome."*

*Acts 28:30-31 (NKJV) <sup>30</sup> Then Paul dwelt two whole years in his own rented house, and received all who came to him, <sup>31</sup> preaching the kingdom of God and teaching the things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ with all confidence, no one forbidding him.*

"Stood," in the Greek, means "to come upon, to place at, to be present, to place one's self above, to stand by." I love the imagery.

- As you look at the Lord saying he stands beside Paul, as he stands besides us, to stand next to, as he would say to the enemy, say to those, the Evil One coming against us, "I'm with him. I'm with her."
- Next point. "To stand over" means "in front of." He's speaking the word to the enemy, to the Evil One, "You have to go through me first to get to him, to get to her."
- Next point. "To stand by," the Lord's on alert. Watch. Ready for action. He's the ultimate soldier ready to be deployed and he's ready for war. His sword is sharp. His equipment is ready. And he deploys at a moment's notice, stand beside his people.

*What I like about this, Paul doesn't say, "You won't believe this." He is really saying, "Believe this. The Lord stood beside me, and he will stand beside you.*

It's His nature, attribute, of who He is. It's what the Lord does. It's therefore who and what He does. 2 Timothy 2:13. He's faithful. I don't know how many times he has stood beside me, times I felt his presence. But more so in the midst of a situation or a fiery trial. And he stood beside me, and I knew he did, because he spoke his Word and I literally could sense his presence as he spoke his Word to me. And do you see Paul connect his Word, "You will testify of me in Rome," with his presence, as he says, and stood by him.

*2 Timothy 2:11–13 (NKJV)* <sup>11</sup> This is a faithful saying: For if we died with Him, We shall also live with Him. <sup>12</sup> If we endure, We shall also reign with Him. If we deny Him, He also will deny us. <sup>13</sup> If we are faithless, He remains faithful; He cannot deny Himself.

*Matthew 10:32–33 (NKJV)* <sup>32</sup> "Therefore whoever confesses Me before men, him I will also confess before My Father who is in heaven. <sup>33</sup> But whoever denies Me before men, him I will also deny before My Father who is in heaven.

*It's easy for us to miss that. But Paul is refreshed and strengthened in remembering God has stood, past tense, will stand, present tense, and will be standing, future tense.*

**Even when Paul was all Alone**

How about you? Even as I speak, now, you say, "Lord, I remember you standing with me when...", and you fill in the blank. And he'll stir your heart to remind you of the times he stood with you, when that situation was hard, when that looked like a dire, and when it looked like there was nowhere else to go, and you felt the Lord uphold you by his mighty arms and his beating heart for you.

And I pray you hear him say, "And I will stand beside you, over you, and in front of you, today in the days, until I see you face to face on Heaven's shore, when I will embrace you, and I will look into your eyes and say, 'Welcome home. Welcome home'."

### **The Lord Stood by Me: When I Needed a Savior (4:18)**

**(2 Timothy 4:18 NKJV) And the Lord will deliver me from every evil work and preserve me for His heavenly kingdom. To Him be glory forever and ever. Amen!**

Verse 18. Will deliver me. This counters the Demas love of the present world. Paul's looking for a city whose builder and maker is God. Paul doesn't consider this present world, his world. And therefore, no matter what happens in this world, he knows that he'll be delivered from it. But then, be delivered into the next world, before Christ, the king himself.

*2 Timothy 4:9–10 (NKJV)* <sup>9</sup> Be diligent to come to me quickly; <sup>10</sup> for Demas has forsaken me, having loved this present world, and has departed for Thessalonica—Crescens for Galatia, Titus for Dalmatia.

*Hebrews 11:9–10 (NKJV)* <sup>9</sup> By faith he dwelt in the land of promise as in a foreign country, dwelling in tents with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise; <sup>10</sup> for he waited for the city which has foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

Speaking of present world compared to eternal world.

How fitting, back to this theme, this word, "stood", as it's spoken here, because we read it, first time, the word used in Luke's Gospel, an angel of the Lord, "I bring you tidings of great joy." And then, first time we read it in Revelation 5:6, "And there stood a Lamb as one that was slain, who took the scroll." The Lord, STOOD, in the gap, to deliver us from the vice-grip of sin and death, by coming to rescue us, deliver us so we have more than life in this present age, but an eternal life in the kingdom with Him forever and ever.

*2 Timothy 4:17 (NKJV)* <sup>17</sup> But the Lord stood with me and strengthened me, so that the message might be preached fully through me, and that all the Gentiles might hear. Also I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion.

*Luke 2:8–14 (NKJV)* <sup>8</sup> Now there were in the same country shepherds living out in the fields, keeping watch over their flock by night. <sup>9</sup> And behold, an angel of the Lord stood before them, and the glory of the Lord shone around them, and they were greatly afraid. <sup>10</sup> Then the angel said to them, "Do not be afraid, for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy which will be to all people. <sup>11</sup> For there is born to you this day in the city of David a Savior, who is Christ the Lord. <sup>12</sup> And this will be the sign to you: You will find a Babe wrapped in swaddling cloths, lying in a manger." <sup>13</sup> And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God and saying: <sup>14</sup> "Glory to God in the highest, And on earth peace, goodwill toward men!"

*Revelation 5:1-7 (NKJV) <sup>1</sup> And I saw in the right hand of Him who sat on the throne a scroll written inside and on the back, sealed with seven seals. <sup>2</sup> Then I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, "Who is worthy to open the scroll and to loose its seals?" <sup>3</sup> And no one in heaven or on the earth or under the earth was able to open the scroll, or to look at it. <sup>4</sup> So I wept much, because no one was found worthy to open and read the scroll, or to look at it. <sup>5</sup> But one of the elders said to me, "Do not weep. Behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, has prevailed to open the scroll and to loose its seven seals." <sup>6</sup> And I looked, and behold, in the midst of the throne and of the four living creatures, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as though it had been slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God sent out into all the earth. <sup>7</sup> Then He came and took the scroll out of the right hand of Him who sat on the throne.*

### **The Lord Stood by Me: Because It Is All About Grace – His Grace (4:19-22)**

**(2 Timothy 4:19 NKJV) Greet Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus.**

**(2 Timothy 4:20 NKJV) Erastus stayed in Corinth, but Trophimus I have left in Miletus sick.**

**(2 Timothy 4:21 NKJV) Do your utmost to come before winter. Eubulus greets you, as well as Pudens, Linus, Claudia, and all the brethren.**

Interesting Trophimus was sick even though he walked with the Apostle Paul. The same man whose sweat rags would heal people. Sometimes God heals, sometimes He doesn't. It is all according to His perfect will.

Paul says, "Only Luke is with me (v.10)," but here he lists some sweet people who send their greetings. Obviously, they had been with Paul, knew that he was writing a letter to Timothy. They knew Timothy and they wanted to send greetings to Timothy. So, what we see is that these people were here during this writing, knew details of Paul's life. Therefore, they had to be there with Paul to say, "Oh, make sure you tell Timothy we said, hello." And the scripture doesn't contradict itself. And neither does Paul, looking for some theatrical dramatic statement of, "only Luke is with me," when these other people we've seen have been with him. I think what we see here, as we look at the context, as he mentioned, "Bring Mark. He's useful to me in ministry." And we see the others being sent out for ministry, I believe what we see here is what Paul grieves about regarding Demas is the brother-in-arms. They were soldiers together. They were a band of brothers fighting the formidable foe, the Evil One, Caesar Nero, the world, religion, all of them coming at once. And they stood arm-in-arm, toe-to-toe, to fight. And when he speaks of the others being sent out for ministry and he speaks of Demas leaving, I believe he's speaking of, "We once fought together, and Demas left me."

**(2 Timothy 4:22 NKJV) The Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Grace be with you. Amen.**

### **Last Words!!!!!!**

And verse 22, the last recorded words of this great man, and what does he say?

Grace.....Grace be with you.

That is what it is all about, unmerited, undeserved, favor of God. He loves you, and He will be back for you.

### **Outline - The Lord Stood by Me:**

- When Others Came Against Me (4:14-15)
- When I Was All Alone (4:16-17)
- When I Needed a Savior (4:18)
- Because It Is All About Grace – His Grace (4:19-22)

### **Prayer**

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) <sup>12</sup> For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

### **In Every Study**

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)

- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do His mighty work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) <sup>16</sup> Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

# 2 Timothy 3:16

## The Uniqueness of the Bible

*\*\*The Bible is the Anvil that broke all the Hammers that came against it.\*\**

**(2 Timothy 3:16 NKJV) All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness,**  
**(2 Timothy 3:17 NKJV) that the man of God may be complete, thoroughly equipped for every good work.**

The Bible is more than simply one of the "greats"; it is unique...

- a. Meaning "one and only"
- b. Meaning "different from all others; having no like or equal" (Webster's)

Our purpose in this lesson is to review in what way the Bible is unique, how it is truly "different from all others; having no like or equal".

Ten Points to consider on how Unique this book we call the Bible is:

1. **Unique in Its Author**
2. **Unique in Its Continuity and Harmony**
3. **Unique in Assembly**
4. **Unique in Its Reliability**
5. **Unique in its Prophecy**
6. **Unique in its Internal Code**
7. **Unique in Its Archeological Proof**
8. **Unique in Reference to Health and Science**
9. **Unique in Circulation**
10. **Unique in the Price that was/is Paid to Print and Read It.**

### 1.) Unique in Its Author

The Author is from the Creator who is outside our time domain:

*(2 Timothy 3:16 NKJV) All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness,*  
*(2 Timothy 3:17 NKJV) that the man of God may be complete, thoroughly equipped for every good work.*

There must be a Bible.

God Himself has declared that those who obey Him will have eternal life in heaven, and those who choose not to obey will have eternal life in hell. Thus God has established a standard by which He wants man to live. But, how can man know what God's standards are unless He reveals them?

Therefore, God must provide the "standard." His "standard" is the Bible; it must exist simply because God holds man accountable.

### 2.) Unique in Its Continuity and Harmony

A. HERE IS A BOOK THAT WAS WRITTEN...

1. Over a long period of time
  - a. About 1600 years
  - b. A span of 40 generations
2. By approximately 40 authors from every walk of life

- a. Moses, political leader trained in the universities of Egypt
  - b. Peter, fisherman
  - c. Amos, herdsman
  - d. Joshua, military general
  - e. Nehemiah, cup bearer to the king of Persia
  - f. Daniel, prime minister in the courts of Babylon
  - g. Luke, physician
  - h. Solomon, philosopher king
  - i. Matthew, tax collector
  - j. Paul, rabbi and tentmaker
3. In different places
    - a. Moses in the wilderness
    - b. Jeremiah in a dungeon
    - c. Daniel on a hillside, and in a palace
    - d. Paul inside prison walls
    - e. Luke while traveling
    - f. John in exile on the isle of Patmos
    - g. Others in the rigors of a military campaign
  4. At different times
    - a. David in times of war
    - b. Solomon in times of peace
  5. During different moods
    - a. Some writing from the heights of joy
    - b. Others from the depths of sorrow and despair
  6. On three continents:
    - Asia,
    - Africa,
    - Europe
  7. In three languages:
    - Hebrew,
    - Aramaic,
    - Greek
  8. With subject matter involving hundreds of controversial topics, such as:
    - a. The origin of man and the universe
    - b. The nature of God
    - c. The nature of man, sin, and man's redemption

### **Maintains Its Continuity and Harmony**

As Broad as all these are, the Bible maintains its continuity and harmony. With all the above, the Bible never contradicts itself, each author is in agreement on all main points.

Imagine what you would have if you took just ten authors...

- 1) From one walk of life, one generation, one place, one time, one mood, one continent, one language
- 2) Speaking on just one controversial subject. You would have a conglomeration of conflicting ideas, not harmony

The Bible maintains its harmony as it takes man from the Fall to Restoration. For Example, "The Paradise Lost of the book of Genesis becomes the Paradise Regained of Revelation." And, "Whereas the gate to the Tree of Life is closed in Genesis, it is opened forevermore in Revelation."

### **The Bible tells it like it is, and retains its continuity and harmony**

1. The Bible deals frankly with the sins of its characters, even its heroes:
  - a. Adam and Eve - putting off responsibility on to others

- b. Noah - drunkenness
- c. Abraham - cowardice, lying to save his skin
- d. Moses - disobedience to God
- e. David - lying, adultery, murder
- f. Peter - denying the Lord, causing division through hypocrisy
- g. Churches - divided, arrogant, materialistic

2. The Bible has the habit of telling it like it was, and is unique in its portrayal of its key personalities

### **3.) Unique in Assembly**

"By the end of 1993, the whole Bible had been translated into 337 languages; 2,062 languages have translations of at least one book of the Bible." - (Guinness Book of World Records (1998))

Why should we have some understanding of how the Bible came to us?

Young children often think that milk comes in cartons from the grocery store. As they grow up they learn that milk comes from cows on the farm. Likewise many Christians have become so used to having Bibles that they have bought at a book store that they have almost no knowledge of where the present English translations of the Bible came from.

Understanding how the Bible came to us gives us a confident foundation for our faith in the reliability the Bible. Evidence presented in a criminal case must be shown to have been protected by a proper chain of custody from being tampered with. We will be able to answer to critics when they claim that the New Testament contains 200,000 errors.

#### **Definition of Canon**

The Canon – Who decided what went in and didn't? The word canon comes from the root word "reed". The reed was used as a measuring rod and eventually meant "standard."

The word canon applied to Scriptures means, "an officially accepted list of books."

#### **How was the Old Testament Canon Determined?**

The Old Testament as we know it existed before Jesus. All the books of the OT were recognized before Jesus walked the earth. The Jewish people were very detailed about passing their writings down.

Jesus acknowledged the Old Testament as we know it in Luke 24:

*(Luke 24:44 KJV) And he said unto them, These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms, concerning me.*

#### **How was the New Testament Canon Determined?**

The Early church had three criteria for determining what books were to be included or excluded from the Canon of the New Testament.

- First, the books must have apostolic authority-- that is, they must have been written either by the apostles themselves, who were eyewitnesses to what they wrote about, or by associates of the apostles.
- Second, there was the criterion of conformity to what was called the "rule of faith." In other words, was the document congruent with the basic Christian tradition that the church recognized as normative.
- Third, there was the criterion of whether a document had enjoyed continuous acceptance and usage by the church at large (ie. Quoted from by early church writers and fathers)

Example of a book that was excluded: The gospel of Thomas is not included because of the following:

- The gospel of Thomas fails the test of Apostolic authority. None of the early church fathers from Clement to Irenaeus ever quoted from the gospel of Thomas. This indicates that they either did not know of it or that they rejected it as spurious. In either case, the early church fathers fail to support the gospel of Thomas' claim to have been written by the apostle. It was believed to be written around 140 A.D. There is no evidence to support its purported claim to be written by the Apostle Thomas himself.
- The gospel of Thomas fails to conform to the rule of faith. It purports to contain 114 "secret sayings" of Jesus. Some of these are very similar to the sayings of Jesus recorded in the Four Gospels. For example the gospel of Thomas quotes Jesus as saying, "A city built on a high hill cannot be hidden." This reads the same as Matthew's Gospel except that high is added. But Thomas claims that Jesus said, "Split wood; I am there. Lift up a stone, and you will find me there." That concept is pantheistic. Thomas ends with the following saying that denies women salvation unless they are somehow changed into being a man. "Let Mary go away from us, because women are not worthy of life." Jesus is quoted as saying, "Lo, I shall lead her in order to make her male, so that she too may become a living spirit, resembling you males. For every woman who makes herself male will enter into the kingdom of heaven."
- The gospel of Thomas fails the test of continuous usage and acceptance. The lack of manuscript evidence plus the failure of the early church fathers to quote from it or recognize it shows that it was not used or accepted in the early Church. Only two manuscripts are known of this "gospel." Until 1945 only a single fifth-century copy translation in Coptic had been found. Then in 1945 a Greek manuscript of the Gospel of Thomas was found at Nag Hammadi in Egypt. This compares very poorly to the thousands of manuscripts that authenticate the Four Gospels.

The Festal letter of Athanasius (c. A.D. 367) is well known as the first list to contain all and only the present twenty-seven book New Testament Canon. Thirty years later the Synod of Carthage, under the influence of the great Augustine, reached a similar conclusion. Youngblood gives the common Protestant evaluation of these pronouncements:

*Thus led (as we believe) by divine Providence, scholars during the latter half of the fourth century settled for all time the limits of the New Testament canon. The 27 books of Matthew through Revelation constitute that New Testament, which possesses divine authority equal to that of the Old.*

## **History of the Bible - Timeline of the Writings**

### **Important terms to know:**

Autographs: The original texts were written either by the author's own hand or by a scribe under their personal supervision.

Manuscripts: Until Gutenberg first printed the Latin Bible in 1456, all Bibles were hand copied onto papyrus, parchment, and paper.

Translations: When the Bible is translated into a different language it is usually translated from the original Hebrew and Greek. However some translations in the past were derived from an earlier translation. For example the first English translation by John Wycliffe in 1380 was prepared from the Latin Vulgate.

The following is a time line for the writings of the various books of the Old and New Testaments and important translations made from them.

### **Old Testament Timeline/Translations**

#### **Autographs - Old Testament**

- 1450-1400 B.C. The traditional date for Moses' writing of Genesis-Deuteronomy written in Hebrew.

- 586 B.C. Jerusalem was destroyed by the Babylonian king Nebuchadnezzar. The Jews were taken into captivity to Babylon. They remained in Babylon under the Medo-Persian Empire and there began to speak Aramaic.
- 555-545 B.C. The Book of Daniel Chapters. 2:4 to 7:28 were written in Aramaic.
- 425 B.C. Malachi, the last book of the Old Testament, was written in Hebrew.
- 400 B.C. Ezra Chapters. 4:8 to 6:18; and 7:12-26 were written in Aramaic.

#### Manuscripts - Old Testament

The following is a list of the oldest Hebrew manuscripts of the Old Testament **that are still in existence.**

- The Dead Sea Scrolls: date from 200 B.C. - 70 A.D. and contain the entire book of Isaiah and portions of every other Old Testament book but Esther.
- Geniza Fragments: portions the Old Testament in Hebrew and Aramaic, discovered in 1947 in an old synagogue in Cairo, Egypt, which date from about 400 A.D.
- Ben Asher Manuscripts: five or six generations of this family made copies of the Old Testament using the Masoretic Hebrew text, from 700-950 A.D. The following are examples of the Hebrew Masoretic text-type.
- Aleppo Codex: contains the complete Old Testament and is dated around 950 A.D. Unfortunately over one quarter of this Codex was destroyed in anti-Jewish riots in 1947.
- Codex Leningradensis: The complete Old Testament in Hebrew copied by the last member of the Ben Asher family in A.D. 1008.

#### Translations - Old Testament

The Old Testament was translated very early into Aramaic and Greek.

- 400 B.C. The Old Testament began to be translated into Aramaic. This translation is called the Aramaic Targums. This translation helped the Jewish people, who began to speak Aramaic from the time of their captivity in Babylon, to understand the Old Testament in the language that they commonly spoke. In the first century Palestine of Jesus' day, Aramaic was still the commonly spoken language.
- 250 B.C. The Old Testament was translated into Greek. This translation is known as the Septuagint. It is sometimes designated "LXX" (which is Roman numeral for "70") because it was believed that 70 to 72 translators worked to translate the Hebrew Old Testament in Greek. The Septuagint was often used by New Testament writers when they quoted from the Old Testament. The LXX was translation of the Old Testament that was used by the early Church.

The following is a list of the oldest Greek LXX translations of the Old Testament **that are still in existence.**

- Chester Beatty Papyri: Contains nine Old Testament Books in the Greek Septuagint and dates between 100-400 A.D.
- Codex Vaticanus and Codex Sinaiticus each contain almost the entire Old Testament of the Greek Septuagint and they both date around 350 A.D.

#### The New Testament Timeline/Translation

##### Autographs - New Testament

- 45- 95 A.D. The New Testament was written in Greek. The Pauline Epistles, the Gospel of Mark, the Gospel of Luke, and the book of Acts are all dated from 45-63 A.D.
- The Gospel of John and the Revelation may have been written as late as 95 A.D.

##### Manuscripts - New Testament

There are over 5,600 early Greek Manuscripts of the New Testament **that are still in existence.** The oldest manuscripts were written on papyrus and the later manuscripts were written on leather called parchment.

- 125 A.D. The New Testament manuscript which dates most closely to the original autograph was copied around 125 A.D, within 35 years of the original. It is designated "p 52" and contains a small portion of John 18. (The "p" stands for papyrus.)
- 200 A.D. Bodmer p 66 a papyrus manuscript which contains a large part of the Gospel of John.
- 200 A.D. Chester Beatty Biblical papyrus p 46 contains the Pauline Epistles and Hebrews.
- 225 A.D. Bodmer Papyrus p 75 contains the Gospels of Luke and John.
- 250-300 A.D. Chester Beatty Biblical papyrus p 45 contains portions of the four Gospels and Acts.
- 350 A.D. Codex Sinaiticus contains the entire New Testament and almost the entire Old Testament in Greek. It was discovered by a German scholar Tischendorf in 1856 at an Orthodox monastery at Mt. Sinai.
- 350 A.D. Codex Vaticanus: {B} is an almost complete New Testament. It was cataloged as being in the Vatican Library since 1475.

There are more than 5,600 known Greek manuscripts of the New Testament, over 10,000 in Latin and over 9,300 other early versions totaling 24,000+ manuscript copies of portions of the New Testament in existence today, ranking it first in manuscript evidence.

#### Translations - New Testament

Early translations of the New Testament can give important insight into the underlying Greek manuscripts from which they were translated.

- 180 A.D. Early translations of the New Testament from Greek into Latin, Syriac, and Coptic versions began about 180 A.D.
- 195 A.D. The name of the first translation of the Old and New Testaments into Latin was termed Old Latin, both Testaments having been translated from the Greek. Parts of the Old Latin were found in quotes by the church father Tertullian, who lived around 160-220 A.D. in north Africa and wrote treatises on theology.
- 300 A.D. The Old Syriac was a translation of the New Testament from the Greek into Syriac.
- 300 A.D. The Coptic Versions: Coptic was spoken in four dialects in Egypt. The Bible was translated into each of these four dialects.
- 380 A.D. The Latin Vulgate was translated by St. Jerome. He translated into Latin the Old Testament from the Hebrew and the New Testament from Greek. The Latin Vulgate became the Bible of the Western Church until the Protestant Reformation in the 1500's. It continues to be the authoritative translation of the Roman Catholic Church to this day. The Protestant Reformation saw an increase in translations of the Bible into the common languages of the people.
- Other early translations of the Bible were in Armenian, Georgian, and Ethiopic, Slavic, and Gothic.
- 1380 A.D. The first English translation of the Bible was by John Wycliffe. He translated the Bible into English from the Latin Vulgate. This was a translation from a translation and not a translation from the original Hebrew and Greek. Wycliffe was forced to translate from the Latin Vulgate because he did not know Hebrew or Greek.

#### The Advent of Printing

Printing greatly aided the transmission of the biblical texts.

- 1456 A.D. Gutenberg produced the first printed Bible in Latin. Printing revolutionized the way books were made. From now on books could be published in great numbers and at a lower cost.
- 1514 A.D. The Greek New Testament was printed for the first time by Erasmus. He based his Greek New Testament from only five Greek manuscripts, the oldest of which dated only as far back as the twelfth century. With minor revisions, Erasmus' Greek New Testament came to be known as the **Textus Receptus** or the "received texts."

- 1522 A. D. Polyglot Bible was published. The Old Testament was in Hebrew, Aramaic, Greek, and Latin and the New Testament in Latin and Greek. Erasmus used the Polyglot to revise later editions of his New Testament. Tyndale made use of the Polyglot in his translation on the Old Testament into English which he did not complete because he was martyred in 1534.
- 1611 A.D. The King James Version into English from the original Hebrew and Greek. The King James translators of the New Testament used the **Textus Receptus** as the basis for their translations.
- 1968 A.D. The United Bible Societies 4th Edition of the Greek New Testament. This Greek New Testament made use of the oldest Greek manuscripts which date from 175 A.D. This was the Greek New Testament text from which the NASV and the NIV were translated.
- 1971 A.D. The New American Standard Version (NASV) was published. It makes use of the wealth of much older Hebrew and Greek manuscripts now available that weren't available at the time of the translation of the KJV. Its wording and sentence structure closely follow the Greek in more of a word for word style.
- 1983 A.D. The New International Version (NIV) was published. It also made use of the oldest manuscript evidence. It is more of a "thought-for-thought" translation and reads more easily than the NASV.
  - As an example of the contrast between word-for-word and thought-for-thought translations, notice below the translation of the Greek word "hagios-holy"
  - NASV Hebrews 9:25. "...the high priest enters the holy place year by year with blood not his own."
  - NIV Hebrews 9:25. "...the high priest enters the Most Holy Place every year with blood that is not his own."
  - The NIV supplies "understood" information about the Day of Atonement, namely that the high priest's duties took place in the compartment of the temple known specifically as the Most Holy Place. Note that the NASV simply says "holy place" reflecting the more literal translation of "hagios."

#### **4.) Unique in Its Reliability**

##### **There must be a Bible.**

God Himself has declared that those who obey Him will have eternal life in heaven, and those who choose not to obey will have eternal life in hell. Thus God has established a standard by which He wants man to live. But, how can man know what God's standards are unless He reveals them?

Therefore, God must provide the "standard." His "standard" is the Bible; it must exist simply because God holds man accountable.

##### **The Bible must be without error.**

Since God is responsible for providing man with the "standard," by which to live, He must also assure that it is without error for all of mankind. Will a Holy God whose justice is pure expect man to live by His standards if His original "standard," and subsequent transmissions of that "standard" are corrupt? No, that would be illogical.

Therefore, the expected "standard," and all subsequent copies of that "standard" must also be perfect in order for it to be effective.

##### **The Bible must be easy to understand.**

Can you imagine being given a directive to carry out, but having that order verbalized or written in a language that you cannot understand? How could you be expected to obey? Furthermore, it really wouldn't make any difference if the directive was an absolutely pure truth; if you can not understand it, then it becomes a meaningless order. Likewise, a Bible that is open to various interpretations is no "standard" at all; nor would God expect man to obey such a confusing "standard." Again, that would be illogical.

Therefore, the Bible must be readily understood in order for God to hold man accountable. This is not to say that man must have an intricate knowledge of all details in the Bible, but in areas essential to daily life and the fundamental truths of the Christian faith, the Bible must be readily understood by all who seek its truths in their hearts.

Therefore, God has provided mankind with His standard of personal accountability to Him: the Bible; it is without error; and, it is comprehensible.

Such a defense can be effective for the person who prides himself on his perceived objectivity and ability to apply logic to problem solving. With such a person you will at the very least get him thinking about the Bible as well as God. But a more excellent way to reason against unbelief in the Bible as God's Word is to know and be able to articulate the incredible facts that attest to the reliability of the Bible as a historical document. That is the subject of this presentation.

### **The Bible Must Follow Original Writings**

The heart of this matter for both Christians and others is an assurance of the historical reliability of the Bible. Quite simply, "Does the text of the Bible have any credibility as historic literature?"; or, "How closely does the modern Bible follow the original writings?" All documents of antiquity, even those modern forgeries that claim authenticity, are subjected to a process termed historiography; i.e., subjecting the document in question to specific tests to determine its reliability.

### **The Tests of Historiography**

The Military historian, C. Sanders lists the three basic tests of historiography:

1. The Bibliographical Test;
2. The Internal Evidence Test;
3. The External Evidence Test.

These tests determine the historicity and credibility of any ancient manuscript.

### The Bibliographical Test

The bibliographical test is an examination of the reliability of the copies of documents (that were transmitted from the original written document(s), known as autographs). This test answers the question, "Because we don't have the autographs, how reliable are the manuscript copies that we have?"

There are two principle factors that apply to the bibliographical test:

- 1) the **quantity** of manuscript copies;
- 2) the **time interval** between the autographs and the existing manuscript copies.

---

<u>Writing</u>	<u>Original Writing</u>	<u>Existing Earliest Copy</u>	<u>Span</u>	<u>#Copies</u>
NT	40-100AD	125AD	25yrs	24,000
Homer (Iliad)	900BC	400BC	500	643
Caesar	100-44BC	900AD	1000	10
Plato	427-347BC	900AD	1200	7
Aristotle	384-322BC	1100AD	1400	49

---

### **The Bibliographical Evidence of the New Testament and Homer's "Iliad" Compared**

Homer's Iliad is secular literature from ancient Greece that has the largest number of manuscript copies (designated MSS) in existence (excluding the New Testament). Both the Iliad and the New Testament MSS were written in the same language (Greek). Both were considered "Sacred" writings of their culture. Both have had been subject to debate regarding the authenticity of the authors. Indeed, for many years the Iliad had been considered to be authentic Greek literature of antiquity, but unreliable in its portrayal of Greek civilization and historical events until modern archaeology began to substantiate many of the claims of Homer, just like the New Testament. Let us subject both of these documents to the bibliographical test. The author assumes the reader has familiarity with the general content of the New Testament books and letters, but may not be familiar with Homer's Iliad.

The Iliad is major epic of Greek antiquity written in a poetic literary style that is set in the final year of the Trojan War (c. 1200 B.C.), which forms the background for its central plot -- the story of the wrath of the Greek hero Achilles. Homer is the name traditionally assigned to the author of both the Iliad and Odyssey, the two major epics of Greek antiquity. Nothing is known of Homer as an individual, and in fact the question of whether a single person can be said to be responsible for the creation of these two epics is highly controversial. Linguistic and historical evidence, however, concedes a supposition that the poems were composed in the Greek settlements on the west coast of Asia Minor in the latter half of the 8th century B.C. Thus, historians doubt the actual existence of an individual named "Homer" credited as the author of the "Iliad;" but, they also presume that the literature was indeed written by ancient Greeks in the late 8th century B.C.

Now, let us examine the bibliographical evidence of transmission of the Iliad to the present:

- Written 900 B.C.
- There are 643 manuscript copies of the Iliad.
- The only preserved MS with the complete text dates to the 13th century A.D.
- The earliest MSS with a portion of the whole text dates to 400 B.C.
- The timespan from the latest date written (900 B.C.) to the earliest [partial] copy (400 B.C.) is 500 years.
- Thus, Homer's Iliad, with 643 MSS in existence, having an earliest MS copy dating only 500 years from the time of its writing is widely accepted as a completely reliable literature or history by scholars. In other words, there is no doubt in their minds that the existing MSS of Iliad are indeed actual copies of an original document that has never been located.

By comparison, let us examine the bibliographical evidence of transmission of the New Testament to the present:

- Written A.D. 40-100
- There are more than 24,000 manuscript copies of the books of the New Testament.
- The earliest MSS copy dates to A.D. 125.
- The time span from the date written (A.D. 100) to the earliest copy (A.D. 125) is 25 years.

### **Textual Comparison of the New Testament and Homer's Iliad**

Textual comparison between copies of ancient MSS generally reveals variations in the actual text between one copy and another. These variations may be differences in spelling, punctuation, grammar, or differences in the actual content of the text itself. Most variants of ancient MSS reveal differences in spelling, punctuation, and grammar. Obviously, the greater the number of copies in existence proportionately increases the statistical probability of differences between them.

The Iliad and the New Testament are both good books to compare. Just as the New Testament is Sacred to Christians, the Iliad was "Sacred" to the ancient Greeks, and both books were written in Greek. Both texts underwent textual changes and criticism of their Greek manuscripts. However, a scholarly examination of textual variants among all extant MSS reveals 764 lines of the Iliad in question, with only 40 lines (400 words total) of the New Testament are in doubt. Thus, the total textual corruption of the Iliad is 5.0% as compared to only 0.5% for the New Testament

The New Testament contains approximately 20,000 lines, of which 40 lines are in question. This equals 0.5% (one half of one percent).

The Iliad contains approximately 15,600 lines, of which 764 lines are in question. This equals five percent. That's ten times more variants than the New Testament in a document only three-quarters its length.

There is yet another very strong bibliographic support for the accuracy of the New Testament in its large numbers of translations into other languages besides Greek. This fact is unusual since ancient literature was rarely translated into another language. However, Christianity is a missionary faith and has been from its inception in the 1st century A.D. The earliest versions of the New Testament were prepared by missionaries for use among peoples whose native language was Syriac, Latin, or Coptic. These translations were prepared around A.D. 150 (once again a very close time interval to the original autographs) and currently number more than 15,000 existing MSS.

#### The Internal Evidence Test for the Reliability of the New Testament

The bibliographical test determines only if a MSS transmits what was originally written in the autograph(s). The task still remains to determine the extent of credibility of that written record. This is the matter of internal criticism.

In the case of the New Testament, which essentially records the accounts of the life and teaching of Jesus Christ, the writers of the various books and epistles were either eyewitnesses themselves, or they recorded the accounts of eyewitnesses to the actual events or teachings of Jesus. Moreover, there is a closeness in the recorded accounts of the writers of the gospels that is extremely effective in certifying the accuracy of what is recorded.

That a few simple men should in one generation have invented so powerful and appealing a personality, so lofty an ethic, and so inspiring a vision of human brotherhood, would be a miracle far more incredible than any recorded in the gospels.

Every writer and Apostle was persecuted and killed (Luke unknown), the ultimate question has to be asked, why would each and every one of them be willing to die for a lie, you would expect that at least one of them would have recanted of his story, but there are no writing that state such a thing.

#### The External Evidence Test for the Reliability of the New Testament

External evidence is the third test of historicity of ancient MSS. This test subjects the document in question to any supporting external historical materials that would confirm or deny the internal testimony of the document itself. "Conformity or agreement with other known historical or scientific facts is often the decisive test of evidence, whether of one or more witnesses."

The external attestation of the New Testament is so complete that if every copy of the New Testament were lost (including all modern Bibles), the complete document could be assembled solely from various quotations of it in the writings of the early Church Fathers and others.

The earliest manuscripts we have of major portions of the New Testament are p 45, p 46, p66, and p 75, and they date from 175-250 A. D. The early church fathers (97-180 A.D.) bear witness to even earlier New Testament manuscripts by quoting from all but one of the New Testament books.

- Clement (30-100 A.D.) wrote an epistle to the Corinthian Church around 97 A.D. He reminded them to heed the epistle that Paul had written to them years before. Recall that Clement had labored with Paul (Philippians 4:3). He quoted from the following New Testament books: Luke, Acts, Romans, 1 Corinthians, Ephesians, Titus, 1 and 2 Peter, Hebrews, and James.
- The apostolic fathers Ignatius (30-107 A.D.), Polycarp (65-155 A.D.), and Papias (70-155 A.D.) cite verses from every New Testament book except 2 and 3 John. They thereby authenticated nearly the entire New Testament. Both Ignatius and Polycarp were disciples of the apostle John.
- Justin Martyr, (110-165 A.D.), cited verses from the following 13 books of the New Testament: Matthew, Mark, Luke, John, Acts, Romans, 1 Corinthians, Galatians, 2 Thessalonians, Hebrews, 1 and 2 Peter, and Revelation.
- Irenaeus, (120-202 A.D.), wrote a five volume work Against Heresies in which, He quoted from every book of the New Testament but 3 John. He quoted from the New Testament books over 1,200 times.

### The Reliability of the Old Testament

Thus far, a cursory examination of the historiography of the New Testament has been presented. But how do the Old Testament MSS compare? After all, both the Old and the New Testaments comprise the Bible as a whole. Before examining the reliability of the Old Testament, the reader needs to remember that the credibility of the New Testament is established beyond all reasonable doubt. And, Jesus referred repeatedly to the Old Testament Scripture -- both in quoting Scripture as well as attesting to its reliability and canonicity. At best, such consideration must contribute to the external evidence for the reliability of the Old Testament. With all due respect to such rigorous objectivity the Christian also needs to carefully consider what the Lord has said about Hebrew Scripture.

Bernard Ramm speaks of the accuracy and number of Biblical manuscripts of the Hebrew Scriptures:

"Jews preserved it as no other manuscript has ever been preserved. With their massora they kept tabs on every letter, syllable, word and paragraph. They had special classes of men within their culture whose sole duty was to preserve and transmit these documents with practically perfect fidelity... who ever counted the letters, syllables and words of Plato or Aristotle? Cicero or Seneca?"

The Old Testament does not have the wealth of MSS evidence as the New Testament; however, once the facts of the extreme caution exercised by the Jews in transcription are brought to light, one will readily see the uniqueness of this Scripture in its reliability.

Following the council of Jamnia in A.D. 70 the canon of Hebrew Scripture was formally established and efforts were taken to duplicate copies of the Scripture for use by the widely scattered Jews. During the period A.D. 100-500 Hebrew civil and canonical law was cataloged by a group of Hebrews known as the Talmudists. They had an extremely intricate system of transcribing synagogue scrolls that approaches fanaticism. Indeed, a Christian begins to glimpse the zealous attention to minute detail that characterized the Hebrew religious system condemned by Jesus. To wit:

- A synagogue scroll must be written on the skins of clean animals, that were
- Prepared for the particular use of the synagogue by a Jew;
- The skins must be fastened together with the strings taken from clean animals;
- Every skin must contain a certain number of columns, equal throughout the entire codex.

- **The length of each column must not extend over less than 48 or more than 60 lines; and, the breadth must consist of thirty letters;**
- The whole copy must be first lined; and if three words be written without a line, it is worthless;
- The ink should be black, neither red, green, nor any other color, and be prepared according to a definite recipe;
- An authentic copy must be the exemplar, from which the transcriber ought not in the least deviate;
- **No word or letter, not even a yod, must be written from memory, the scribe not having looked at the codex before him;**
- Between every consonant the space of a hair or thread must intervene;
- Between every new parashah, or section, the breadth of nine consonants;
- Between every book, three lines;
- The fifth book of Moses must terminate exactly with a line; but the rest need not do so;
- Besides this, the copyist must sit in full Jewish dress;
- **Wash his whole body;**
- **Write the name of God with a new pen only.**
- And should a king address him while writing that name, he must take no notice of him.
- Any scroll in which the above regulations were not strictly observed was condemned to be buried in the ground or burned; or they were banished to the schools, to be used as reading books. Once a scroll was transcribed, the Talmudists were so convinced that it was an exact duplicate of the codex they copied from, they gave the new copy equal authority. Thus, when one considers the rigid rules and phenomenal accuracy of the Talmudic copyists in preparing a new scroll we begin to understand the absence of numerous ancient Old Testament MSS, and one must also be convinced of the reliability of the extant copies.

Following the Talmudists was the Massoretic Period between A.D. 500-900AD. Not sufficiently comfortable with the rigid Talmudic rules for transcribing Scripture, the Massorettes devised an incredibly complex system of safeguards against mistakes in transcription. Sir Fredric Kenyon says, "Besides recording varieties of reading, tradition, or conjecture, the Massorettes undertook a number of calculations which do not enter into the ordinary sphere of textual criticism. They numbered the verses, words, and letters of every book. They calculated the middle word and the middle letter of each. They enumerated verses which contained all the letters of the alphabet, or a certain number of them; and so on. These trivialities, as we may rightly consider them, had yet the effect of securing minute attention to the precise transmission of the text; and they are but an excessive manifestation of a respect for the sacred Scriptures which in itself deserves nothing but praise. The Massorettes were indeed anxious that not one jot nor tittle, not one smallest letter nor one tiny part of a letter of the Law should pass away or be lost." Indeed, for many years the oldest MSS of the Old Testament was a Massoretic copy dated to A.D. 916.

With the discovery of the Dead Sea Scrolls in 1947 the bibliographic evidence of the Old Testament received even more support. Prior to that discovery, the oldest Hebrew Old Testament MSS was dated to A.D. 916. That left a time interval of more than 1,300 years since the completion of the last book of Hebrew Scripture around 400 B.C. That fact cast serious doubts on the bibliographical reliability of the Hebrew Bible since it was no closer to the date of its autographs than many secular ancient MSS. Adding the weight of New Testament MSS that were dated so closely to the original autographs, there was real concern regarding the historicity of the Hebrew Scriptures. This is one the reason for the significance of the Dead Sea Scrolls.

Yet, from the archaeological record and the dating of Dead Sea Scroll MSS the Old Testament reliability is phenomenal. One of the scrolls discovered was a complete MS of the Hebrew text of Isaiah; it is dated at 125 B.C. by paleographers. Its internal evidence is such that since this single book is more than 1,000 years older than the previously extant MS it is incredible that there was only one word of three letters in question! Furthermore, as F. F. Bruce writes, "An incomplete

scroll of Isaiah, found along with the other in the first Qumran cave, and conveniently distinguished as 'Isaiah B,' agrees even more closely with the A.D. 916 Massoretic text." External support for the Old Testament continues to be unearthed in archeological finds of ancient libraries and other MSS.

#### **Note on the 200,000 Errors:**

Many scholars have spent a lifetime of study of the textual variants. The following is the conclusion of the importance of these variants as they relate to the integrity of the New Testament text.

- Again the Definition of Textual Variants: Since all Greek manuscripts of the New Testament prior to Erasmus' first printed Greek New Testament were copied by hand scribal errors or variants could have crept into the texts.. When these Greek New Testament manuscripts are compared with each other we find evidence of scribal errors and places where the different manuscripts differ with one another.
- There are over 200,000 variants in the New Testament alone. How do these variants effect our confidence that the New Testament has been faithfully handed down to us?
- These 200,000 variants are not as large as they seem. Remember that every misspelled word or an omission of a single word in any of the 5,600 manuscript would count as a variant.
- A word of caution must be observed to understand what the word 'variant' truly means when applied to textual comparisons of documents of antiquity. In their text, When Skeptics Ask, the authors, Norman L. Geisler and Ronald M. Brooks, point out "It is easy for someone to leave the wrong impression by saying that there are 200,000 'errors' that have crept into the Bible when the word should be 'variants.' A variant is counted any time one copy is different from any other copy and it is counted again in every copy where it appears. So when a single word is spelled differently in 3,000 copies, that is counted as 3,000 variants. In fact, there are only 10,000 places where variants occur [in the New Testament] and most of those are matters of spelling and word order. There are less than 40 places in the New Testament where we are really not certain which reading is original, but not one of these has any effect on a central doctrine of the faith. Note: the problem is not that we don't know what the text is, but that we are not certain which text has the right reading. **We have 100 percent of the New Testament and we are sure about 99.5 percent of it.**"

### **5.) Unique in its Prophecy**

Unique among all books ever written, the Bible accurately foretells specific events -- in detail -- many years, sometimes centuries, before they occur. Approximately 2500 prophecies appear in the pages of the Bible, about 2000 of which already have been fulfilled to the letter, Concerning the coming Messiah, Jesus fulfilled all 300. -- no errors. (The remaining 500 or so reach into the future and may be seen unfolding as days go by.) Since the probability for any one of these prophecies having been fulfilled by chance averages less than one in ten (figured very conservatively) and since the prophecies are for the most part independent of one another, the odds for all these prophecies having been fulfilled by chance without error is less than one in 102000 (that is 1 with 2000 zeros written after it)!

God is not the only one, however, who uses forecasts of future events to get people's attention. Satan does too. Through clairvoyants (such as Jeanne Dixon and Edgar Cayce), mediums, spiritists, and others, come remarkable predictions, though rarely with more than about 60 percent accuracy, never with total accuracy. Messages from Satan, furthermore, fail to match the detail of Bible prophecies, nor do they include a call to repentance.

The acid test for identifying a prophet of God is recorded by Moses in **Deuteronomy 18:21-22**. According to this Bible passage (and others), God's prophets, as distinct from Satan's spokesmen, are 100 percent accurate in their predictions. There is no room for error.

### **The Seventy 7s of Daniel**

(1) Some time before 500 B.C. the prophet Daniel proclaimed that Israel's long-awaited Messiah would begin his public ministry 483 years after the issuing of a decree to restore and rebuild Jerusalem (Daniel 9:25-26). He further predicted that the Messiah would be "cut off," killed, and that this event would take place prior to a second destruction of Jerusalem. Abundant documentation shows that these prophecies were perfectly fulfilled in the life (and crucifixion) of Jesus Christ. The decree regarding the restoration of Jerusalem was issued by Persia's King Artaxerxes to the Hebrew priest Ezra in 458 B.C., 483 years later the ministry of Jesus Christ began in Galilee. (Remember that due to calendar changes, the date for the start of Christ's ministry is set by most historians at about 26 A.D. Also note that from 1 B.C. to 1 A.D. is just one year.) Jesus' crucifixion occurred only a few years later, and about four decades later, in 70 A.D. came the destruction of Jerusalem by Titus.

### **Messiah Born in Bethlehem**

(2) In approximately 700 B.C. the prophet Micah named the tiny village of Bethlehem as the birthplace of Israel's Messiah (Micah 5:2). The fulfillment of this prophecy in the birth of Christ is one of the most widely known and widely celebrated facts in history.

### **Messiah Betrayed for 30 Pieces of Silver**

(3) In the fifth century B.C. a prophet named Zechariah declared that the Messiah would be betrayed for the price of a slave -- thirty pieces of silver, according to Jewish law -- and also that this money would be used to buy a burial ground for Jerusalem's poor foreigners (Zechariah 11:12-13). Bible writers and secular historians both record thirty pieces of silver as the sum paid to Judas Iscariot for betraying Jesus, and they indicate that the money went to purchase a "potter's field," used -- just as predicted -- for the burial of poor aliens (Matthew 27:3-10).

### **Messiah would be Crucified**

(4) Some 400 years before crucifixion was invented, both Israel's King David and the prophet Zechariah described the Messiah's death in words that perfectly depict that mode of execution. Further, they said that the body would be pierced and that none of the bones would be broken, contrary to customary procedure in cases of crucifixion (Psalm 22 and 34:20; Zechariah 12:10). Again, historians and New Testament writers confirm the fulfillment: Jesus of Nazareth died on a Roman cross, and his extraordinarily quick death eliminated the need for the usual breaking of bones. A spear was thrust into his side to verify that he was indeed, dead.

### **Cyrus will Conquer Babylon**

(5) The prophet Isaiah foretold that a conqueror named Cyrus would destroy seemingly impregnable Babylon and subdue Egypt along with most of the rest of the known world. This same man, said Isaiah, would decide to let the Jewish exiles in his territory go free without any payment of ransom (Isaiah 44:28; 45:1; and 45:13). Isaiah made this prophecy 150 years before Cyrus was born, 180 years before Cyrus performed any of these feats (and he did, eventually, perform them all), and 80 years before the Jews were taken into exile.

### **Israel Would be Carried off into Slavery**

(6) The prophet Moses foretold (with some additions by Jeremiah and Jesus) that the ancient Jewish nation would be conquered twice and that the people would be carried off as slaves each time, first by the Babylonians (for a period of 70 years), and then by a fourth world kingdom (which we know as Rome). The second conqueror, Moses said, would take the Jews captive in ships, selling them or giving them away as slaves to all parts of the world. Both of these predictions were fulfilled to the letter, the first in 607 B.C. and the second in 70 A.D. God's spokesmen said, further, that the Jews would remain scattered throughout the entire world for many generations, but without becoming assimilated by the peoples or of other nations, and that

the Jews would one day return to the land of Palestine to re-establish for a second time their nation (Deuteronomy 29; Isaiah 11:11-13; Jeremiah 25:11; Hosea 3:4-5 and Luke 21:23-24). This prophetic statement sweeps across 3,500 years of history to its complete fulfillment -- in our lifetime.

### **The Rebirth of the Nation Israel**

(7) The exact location and construction sequence of Jerusalem's nine suburbs was predicted by Jeremiah about 2,600 years ago. He referred to the time of this building project as "the last days," that is, the time period of Israel's second rebirth as a nation in the land of Palestine (Jeremiah 31:38-40). This rebirth became history in 1948, and the construction of the nine suburbs has gone forward precisely in the locations and in the sequence predicted.

Given that the Bible proves so reliable a document, there is every reason to expect that the remaining 500 prophecies, those slated for the "time of the end," also will be fulfilled to the last letter (see Signs of the End, Tribulation Dooms, and The Rapture Promise). Who can afford to ignore these coming events, much less miss out on the immeasurable blessings offered to anyone and everyone who submits to the control of the Bible's author, Jesus Christ? Would a reasonable person take lightly God's warning of judgment for those who reject what they know to be true about Jesus Christ and the Bible, or who reject Jesus' claim on their lives?

Now is the day of salvation! Now is the time of God's favor! Please do not let it go by without further consideration.

## **6.) Unique in its Internal Code**

Genesis chapter 5 gives a genealogy of Adam. It is no coincidence the each name has a meaning, and when you put the names together, it has a message for us.

Adam	--Man (is)
Seth	--Appointed
Enosh	--Mortal
Cainan	--Sorrow (but)
Mahalalel	--The Blessed God
Jared	--Shall come down
Enoch	--Teaching
Methuselah	--His death shall bring
Lamech	--The Dispairing
Noah	--Comfort, Rest

## **7.) Unique in Its Archeological Proof**

time and time again the Bible spoke of people or places long before any archeological evidence could support it. Here are a few examples:

### **Assyrian King Sargon**

The Assyrian King Sargon was long time known only from the bible account (Isaiah 20;1), it was used as proof the Bible was not authentic. Then archaeological excavations produced the ruins of Sargon's magnificent palace at Khorsabad.

### **Pontius Pilate**

That Pilate existed only on the pages of the Bible, they could find no records of him in historical writings. Then in 1961, in Caesaria, an inscription was found on a stone that said (To the people of Caesarea Tiberium Pontius Pilate Prefect of Judea)

### **Hezekiah Tunnel**

In Jerusalem today a person can walk through a tunnel 1,749 foot long that was cut through solid rock over 2,700 years ago. It is called Hezekiah Tunnel, and is written about in (2 Kings 20:20). It was prepared for an invasion against the city and it connected the outside water source into the inside of the city, undetectable for the enemy.

## **8.) Unique in Reference to Health and Science**

The bible isn't a book of science, but when it speaks of science it is always right on. A few Examples:

### **Health:**

#### **Touching the Dead**

Just the last century medical personnel would go directly from handling the dead in the dissecting room to conducting examinations in the maternity ward. Infections were transferred from the dead, and many more died.

In Numbers 19:11-22, the Law of God said if anyone touches a dead person they become unclean and must wash himself.

#### **Circumcision:**

Back in the turn of the 19<sup>th</sup> century, in NYC they noticed that Jewish woman had a lower rate of cervical cancer than non-Jewish woman. Upon further study they found it was because Jewish woman only married Jewish males and the males were circumcised, and carried less bacteria than the uncircumcised.

(Genesis 17:11 KJV) And ye shall circumcise the flesh of your foreskin; and it shall be a token of the covenant betwixt me and you.

#### **On the 8<sup>th</sup> Day**

No explanation was given why the eighth day was specified for circumcision, but medical research now shows that the blood-clotting element Vitamin K rises to an adequate level at the 8<sup>th</sup> day.

(Leviticus 12:3 KJV) And in the eighth day the flesh of his foreskin shall be circumcised.

### **Science:**

#### **The Earth Hangs on Nothing**

--- (Job 26:7 NKJV) *He stretches out the north over empty space; **He hangs the earth on nothing.***

This was written 4,000 years ago when the common belief that the earth was held up by four elephants standing on a turtle.

#### **The Round Earth**

- ----(Isaiah 40:22 NKJV) *It is He who sits **above the circle of the earth**, And its inhabitants are like grasshoppers, Who stretches out the heavens like a curtain, And spreads them out like a tent to dwell in.*
- Written approximately 2,700 years ago. Yet it was just 1492 Columbus sailed the Ocean Blue, and everyone said he was going to fall off the face of the earth because the earth was flat.

### The Earth's Water Cycle

- --- (Ecclesiastes 1:7 NKJV) *All the rivers run into the sea, Yet the sea is not full; To the place from which the rivers come, **There they return again.***
- Written 3,000 years ago

### The Expanding Universe

- ---- (Isaiah 51:13 KJV) *And forgettest the LORD thy maker, that hath **stretched forth the heavens**, and laid the foundations of the earth; .....*
- Science has proven that the universe is expanding and this was written 2,700 years ago. The word "stretched forth" means to keep expanding.

### Light Divides

- (Job 38:24 KJV) ***By what way is the light parted**, which scattereth the east wind upon the earth?*
- The Light spectrum, was only discovered a few hundred years ago.

### Paths in the Sea

- (Psalms 8:8 KJV) *The fowl of the air, and the fish of the sea, and whatsoever **passeth through the paths of the seas.***
- Paths in the sea wasn't known in the shipping industry until only a hundred or so years ago.

### The Jet Stream

- (Ecclesiastes 1:6 NKJV) *The wind goes toward the south, And turns around to the north; The wind whirls about continually, **And comes again on its circuit.***

### Thermodynamic Principles

- (2 Peter 3:10 KJV) *But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, **and the elements shall melt with fervent heat**, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up.*

Spoken of in the Bible 2000 years ago.

## 9.) Unique in Circulation

THE CIRCULATION OF THE BIBLE...

1. As of 1804 - 409 million copies
2. As of 1932 - one and a third billion copies

"The world's best-selling and most widely distributed book is the Bible, with an estimated 2.5 billion copies sold, 1815-1975." - (Guinness Book of World Records)

It has Survived through Persecution:

- A.) Many have tried to burn it, ban it, and otherwise outlaw it
  - From the days of Roman emperors
  - To the present Communist-dominated countries
- B.) Two illustrations of its survival through persecution:
  - In 303 A.D., the Roman emperor Diocletian issued an edict to stop Christians from worshipping, and to destroy their scriptures. Only 25

- years later the Roman Emperor Constantine called for 50 copies of the Bible to be prepared at the expense of the government!
- Voltaire, French atheist who died in 1778, predicted that Christianity would be swept from existence and pass into history within 100 years of his time. 50 years after his death, the Geneva Bible Society used his printing press and house to produce stacks of Bibles!

Still the #1 selling book in the world.

### **10.) Unique in the Price that was/is Paid to Print and Read It.**

What would make someone willing to die for a book? Because they believed it.

We personally today can thank John Wycliffe's passion and desire that everyone should be free to read the good news of eternal life through faith in Christ. Not everyone agreed with that, many believed that the ordinary people should not have access to this blessed book.

Wycliffe was the first to translate this book into English in the 14<sup>th</sup> century. Four decades later after his death, Wycliffe's bones were dragged from their grave and burned, and the ashes cast into the river

In China and such places they have one Bible for the whole church. They each get one page and when they come back together they trade their pages. If they are caught with one page it is a death sentence, yet they are willing to take the risk.

### **Conclusion**

This is by no means an exhaustive list of sources. In fact, it's just "the tip of the iceberg". But as you can see, there is a remarkable body of evidence supporting the reliability of the Bible. For the Believer this should give you a great sense of confidence in this Book. It is God inspired and life changing.

However, as we warned at the outset, the Bible does contain moral imperatives. This makes some people very uncomfortable. Perhaps you can see that the real question now is not whether the Bible is a trustworthy document, but whether you are willing to read it, consider its contents and claims, and wrestle with its moral implications. You could choose to look the other way and hope later to plead ignorance. Instead, I recommend you take the courageous approach of reading the Scriptures in the pursuit of truth.

### **End Notes:**

I am indebted to Josh McDowell's book, Evidence that Demands a Verdict for much of the material in this study.

Evidence that Demands a Verdict: historical evidences for the Christian faith  
Compiled by Josh McDowell, 1972, 1979 Here's Life Publishers, Inc.  
P.O. Box 1576 San Bernadino, CA 92402, fifteenth printing

## **End of Study: 2 Timothy 3:16 The Uniqueness of the Bible**

***\*\*The Bible is the Anvil that broke all the Hammers that came against it.\*\****

Passage: 2 Timothy 4:22  
Title: A Christmas Devotional

**(2 Timothy 4:22 NKJV) The Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Grace be with you. Amen.**

### **Emmanuel**

The Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. . . . . and they shall call His name Immanuel, which is translated, “God with us”. The Lord, Jesus Christ be with your spirit. His name is Emmanuel, God with us, and with your spirit points us to that it's a spiritual thing. Now I am not going to go on a rant (haha) the ole Christmas has become too commercialized sermon (that are easy picking for a Christmas sermon), rather I just want to bring you – tidings of great joy, what we celebrate is “a spirit” thing.

*Matthew 1:23 (NKJV)* <sup>23</sup> “Behold, the virgin shall be with child, and bear a Son, and they shall call His name Immanuel,” which is translated, “God with us.”

*Luke 2:8–12 (NKJV)* <sup>8</sup> Now there were in the same country shepherds living out in the fields, keeping watch over their flock by night. <sup>9</sup> And behold, an angel of the Lord stood before them, and the glory of the Lord shone around them, and they were greatly afraid. <sup>10</sup> Then the angel said to them, “Do not be afraid, for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy which will be to all people. <sup>11</sup> For there is born to you this day in the city of David a Savior, who is Christ the Lord. <sup>12</sup> And this will be the sign to you: You will find a Babe wrapped in swaddling cloths, lying in a manger.”

### **What Does Christmas Mean?**

Have you ever stopped to ponder and consider, what does Christmas mean? Not the season or the day, but the word “Christmas”. If you research the word, you actually don't find a pure tracing to the origin or the beginning use. We can see the Christ part clearly, and Christ means “anointed one, and was word to declare the “Messiah”. But how about the other part, “mas”?

- The most common agreed meaning is the compound words “Christ” and “Mass”, and it was meant to mean “the special worship service” to celebrate the birth of Christ.
- Other competing meanings and theories come from the Old English, Cristes-messe, which again most agree is “Christ's Mass”, but the origin of the word “mass” in the Christian sense is not entirely clear, as we know it comes the Latin “missa”, and in a verb sense it means “something that has been sent”, and so we would read it to say “The Christ has been sent”, and I like that one too.
- Another is another form of the Latin word “missa” meaning “dismissal”, and I like that because “The Sent One has come to dismiss”, and that is the Law that made us guilty before God.
- And another, is that the word “missah” is actually a Hebrew word, and the word for “unleavened bread”, which God commanded to offered with the Passover sacrifice in Exodus. Unleavened bread represented the absence of sin (hence the Perfect Lamb of God who would take away the sin of the world – John 1:29), and I like this one too.

*Colossians 2:14 (NKJV)* <sup>14</sup> having wiped out the handwriting of requirements that was against us, which was contrary to us. And He has taken it out of the way, having nailed it to the cross.

*John 19:30 (NKJV)* <sup>30</sup> So when Jesus had received the sour wine, He said, “It is finished!” And bowing His head, He gave up His spirit.

*Exodus 12:8 (NKJV)* <sup>8</sup> Then they shall eat the flesh on that night; roasted in fire, with unleavened bread and with bitter herbs they shall eat it.

*John 1:29 (NKJV)* <sup>29</sup> The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him, and said, “Behold! The Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!”

### **Why Bethlehem?**

Bethlehem, the City of David. We know the story of the census, we know the prophecies that needed to be fulfilled, but there is more. Bethlehem is only 5 miles from Jerusalem where the Temple was, where the Passover Lambs would be sacrificed. We all know Micah 5:2, probably a bunch of Christmas cards on your shelf quoting it. But, did you know Micah 4:8, just a few verses before? It reads O' tower of the flock (Migdel-Eder), which is considered by many (not all I should clarify) to be a tower located there near Bethlehem. In any case, we read it was a watchtower of

the flock. Bethlehem, where the angel announced to the shepherds, the Christ was born. The correlation is this..... Bethlehem is where the first-born sheep were placed, kept, raised that were destined for the Temple, and to be sacrificed. Hence why the Lamb of God, the Final Passover sacrifice, would be born. So.....why Bethlehem and why shepherds? Because the watchtower of the flock, it's where the lambs for the temple sacrifice were birthed and raised for perfection, for only a spotless lamb could be sacrificed for the covering of sin. Jesus would atone, cleanse, wipe away sin once and for all sin.

**Micah 5:2 (NKJV)** <sup>2</sup> "But you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, *Though* you are little among the thousands of Judah, *Yet* out of you shall come forth to Me The One to be Ruler in Israel, Whose goings forth *are* from of old, From everlasting."

**Micah 4:8 (NKJV)** <sup>8</sup> And you, O tower of the flock, The stronghold of the daughter of Zion, To you shall it come, Even the former dominion shall come, The kingdom of the daughter of Jerusalem."

**Luke 2:8-11 (NKJV)** <sup>8</sup> Now there were in the same country shepherds living out in the fields, keeping watch over their flock by night. <sup>9</sup> And behold, an angel of the Lord stood before them, and the glory of the Lord shone around them, and they were greatly afraid. <sup>10</sup> Then the angel said to them, "Do not be afraid, for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy which will be to all people. <sup>11</sup> For there is born to you this day in the city of David a Savior, who is Christ the Lord.

**John 1:29 (NKJV)** <sup>29</sup> The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him, and said, "Behold! The Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!"

**1 Corinthians 5:7-8 (NKJV)** <sup>7</sup> Therefore purge out the old leaven, that you may be a new lump, since you truly are unleavened. For indeed Christ, our Passover, was sacrificed for us. <sup>8</sup> Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, nor with the leaven of malice and wickedness, but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.

### **The Gift!**

Roman 6:23, it's a gift. He's Jesus Christ, God's gift to you to preach Christmas without sin and the wages of sin is death doesn't make sense. How is Christmas good news without the why it's good news? God gave you a gift, His eternal Son for eternal life.

**Romans 3:23 (NKJV)** <sup>23</sup> for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God,

**Romans 6:23 (NKJV)** <sup>23</sup> For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.

### **The Grace-Mas**

Brings us back to the passage we started with, - and it goes on to say "Grace be with you".

**2 Timothy 4:22 (NKJV)** <sup>22</sup> The Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Grace be with you. Amen.

Grace, G-R-A-C-E,

God's – riches - at - Christ's - expense.

- G, God gifted us the gift of God
- and riches of God, are the riches of eternal life.
- At is where it is found
- C - Christ. He's Jesus, God's gift to you.
- E is the expense. This gift is a gift we could never afford ourselves. See our gift is not only precious, the Babe of Bethlehem, but priceless.

Do you realize now more than ever we all live at an @ sign? Email address and websites are all @ a specific location.

At, it's a location. Where can you find me? The Lord makes it simple. The Lord made it clear.

- Here's where you can find me, in a manger in Bethlehem, lowly, approachable, unassuming, a baby
- and He would be the same when He road into Jerusalem that final week known as His triumphal entry. He came lowly, riding on a donkey and he went lowly to a cross.

**Matthew 21:4-7 (NKJV)** <sup>4</sup> All this was done that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying: <sup>5</sup> "Tell the daughter of Zion, 'Behold, your King is coming to you, Lowly, and sitting on a donkey, A colt, the foal of a donkey.'" <sup>6</sup> So the disciples went and did as Jesus commanded them. <sup>7</sup> They brought the donkey and the colt, laid their clothes on them, and set Him on them.

The perfect @ sign, the manger and the cross.

He invites us to meet Him, two very clear places, the manger and the cross. Not hidden where we find Him. A star pointed the way and a heavenly host, a shout and a light and God speaks, "Find Me so you can follow Me.", @Jesus.

And He says, "You'll seek Me and find Me when you search for Me with all your heart," Jeremiah 29 and God invites you to meet Him at the manger and the cross.

*Jeremiah 29:11-14 (NKJV)* <sup>11</sup> For I know the thoughts that I think toward you, says the LORD, thoughts of peace and not of evil, to give you a future and a hope. <sup>12</sup> Then you will call upon Me and go and pray to Me, and I will listen to you. <sup>13</sup> And you will seek Me and find Me, when you search for Me with all your heart. <sup>14</sup> I will be found by you, says the LORD, and I will bring you back from your captivity; I will gather you from all the nations and from all the places where I have driven you, says the LORD, and I will bring you to the place from which I cause you to be carried away captive.

Here is very clearly where you can find Me (the manger and the cross), and follow me, and it is all G-R-A-C-E, God's Riches @ Christ's Expense.

The first mention of grace in the Bible is Noah found grace and I point to you to see that it then says in the eyes of God and the first thing to say to you this Christmas is that God sees you this Christmas.

*Genesis 6:8 (NKJV)* <sup>8</sup> But Noah found grace in the eyes of the LORD.

Paul was known as the apostle of grace because he knew that he had received it. And when you receive it, you know it, and you know the gift that has been given to you. 2 Timothy began with grace and it ends with grace. So God's love letter that He writes to mankind when He walked this earth was beginning with a manger grace and ending with a cross grace because it's a gift. The gift is at Christ.

*2 Timothy 1:1-2 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, according to the promise of life which is in Christ Jesus, <sup>2</sup> To Timothy, a beloved son: Grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.

*2 Timothy 4:22 (NKJV)* <sup>22</sup> The Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Grace be with you. Amen.

Grace be with you this Christmas and may I even say.....Merry Grace-mas.

Passage: 2 Timothy 4:22c  
Title: Amen - (We Make It Our Own)

We ended the letter of 2 Timothy, with 4:22, "Amen".

*2 Timothy 4:22 The Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Grace be with you. Amen.*

Amen, when used at the beginning of a discourse, meant "surely, truly, of a truth" (aka – what I am going to tell you is sure and true); when used at an end of a discourse, such as here in verse 22, meant "so it is, so be it, may it be fulfilled".

The word "amen" is a most remarkable word. It was transliterated directly from the Hebrew into the Greek of the New Testament, then into Latin and into English and many other languages, so that it is practically a universal word. It has been called the best known word in human speech. The word is directly related—in fact, almost identical—to the Hebrew word for "believe" (amam), or faithful. Thus, it came to mean "sure" or "truly", an expression of absolute trust and confidence.  
*\*Strong, J. (1995). In Enhanced Strong's Lexicon. Woodside Bible Fellowship.*

It was a custom, which passed over from the synagogues to the Christian assemblies, that when he who had read or discoursed, had offered up solemn prayer to God, the others responded Amen, and thus made the substance of what was uttered their own.

*\*Strong, J. (1995). In Enhanced Strong's Lexicon. Woodside Bible Fellowship.*

So today, a short devotion to close out this letter, a review of some of the key promises given, and a promise of what is ahead for us, as we close with "amen", and the things that have been spoken, *we make it our own.*

### Chapter 1

We make it our own, that we will not bow to fear, and we will live in power, love, and a sound mind - Amen

*2 Timothy 1:7 (NKJV) <sup>7</sup> For God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power and of love and of a sound mind.*

We make it our own, that we will hold fast, hang on to, the pattern of sound word which the Lord has given us... those are the sound words that make for the sound mind, we will not let the world and the influence of the culture steer us away from this solid foundation, and the word that becomes pure power by the Holy Spirit that dwells in us - Amen

*2 Timothy 1:13–14 (NKJV) <sup>13</sup> Hold fast the pattern of sound words which you have heard from me, in faith and love which are in Christ Jesus. <sup>14</sup> That good thing which was committed to you, keep by the Holy Spirit who dwells in us.*

### Chapter 2

We make it our own, that we will be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus - Amen

*2 Timothy 2:1 (NKJV) <sup>1</sup> You therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.*

We make it our own, that we will raise up the next generation – Amen

*2 Timothy 2:2 (NKJV) <sup>2</sup> And the things that you have heard from me among many witnesses, commit these to faithful men who will be able to teach others also.*

We make it our own, that we will endure as good soldiers, athletes, and hardworking farmers – Amen.

*2 Timothy 2:3–7 (NKJV) <sup>3</sup> You therefore must endure hardship as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. <sup>4</sup> No one engaged in warfare entangles himself with the affairs of this life, that he may please him who enlisted him as a soldier. <sup>5</sup> And also if anyone competes in athletics, he is not crowned unless he competes according to the rules. <sup>6</sup> The hardworking farmer must be first to partake of the crops. <sup>7</sup> Consider what I say, and may the Lord give you understanding in all things.*

We make it our own, and lay claim to the faithful saying - Amen

*2 Timothy 2:11–13 (NKJV) <sup>11</sup> This is a faithful saying: For if we died with Him, We shall also live with Him. <sup>12</sup> If we endure, We shall also reign with Him. If we deny Him, He also will deny us. <sup>13</sup> If we are faithless, He remains faithful; He cannot deny Himself.*

We make it our own, we will study to show ourselves approved, rightly dividing the Word of God – Amen

*2 Timothy 2:15 (KJV 1900)* <sup>15</sup> Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.

We make it our own, that we will be vessels of honor, prepared for every good work, useful for the Master – Amen

*2 Timothy 2:20–22 (NKJV)* <sup>20</sup> But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold and silver, but also of wood and clay, some for honor and some for dishonor. <sup>21</sup> Therefore if anyone cleanses himself from the latter, he will be a vessel for honor, sanctified and useful for the Master, prepared for every good work. <sup>22</sup> Flee also youthful lusts; but pursue righteousness, faith, love, peace with those who call on the Lord out of a pure heart.

### Chapter 3

We make it our own, we know that we are living in the last days and they will be perilous, but we will not compromise, nor will we retreat, but we will stand and not be drawn away by them, regardless how hard it gets - Amen

*2 Timothy 3:1–5 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> But know this, that in the last days perilous times will come: <sup>2</sup> For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, <sup>3</sup> unloving, unforgiving, slanderers, without self-control, brutal, despisers of good, <sup>4</sup> traitors, headstrong, haughty, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God, <sup>5</sup> having a form of godliness but denying its power. And from such people turn away!

*2 Timothy 3:12 (NKJV)* <sup>12</sup> Yes, and all who desire to live godly in Christ Jesus will suffer persecution.

We make it our own, that these Scriptures, are Your very breath, Your very heart, and make me complete, and I will study them to not only know them, but by knowing them I know You – Amen

*2 Timothy 3:16–17 (NKJV)* <sup>16</sup> All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, <sup>17</sup> that the man of God may be complete, thoroughly equipped for every good work.

### Chapter 4

We make it our own, that we will preach the word, and be ready in season and out of season – Amen

*2 Timothy 4:1–2 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> I charge you therefore before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, who will judge the living and the dead at His appearing and His kingdom: <sup>2</sup> Preach the word! Be ready in season and out of season. Convince, rebuke, exhort, with all longsuffering and teaching.

We make it our own, that we will fight the good fight, we will finish our race, we will keep the faith, we will not tap out – Amen

*2 Timothy 4:6–7 (NKJV)* <sup>6</sup> For I am already being poured out as a drink offering, and the time of my departure is at hand. <sup>7</sup> I have fought the good fight, I have finished the race, I have kept the faith.

We make it our own, that we will not just be waiting, but ready, for Your soon appearing – Amen

*2 Timothy 4:8 (NKJV)* <sup>8</sup> Finally, there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, will give to me on that Day, and not to me only but also to all who have loved His appearing.

### Waiting for His Soon Appearing

His soon appearing, is where I want to end today, and celebrate, and get fired-up about..... and of course..... make it totally our own.

Here, we see a listing of these cross references of His appearing in 1&2 Timothy and Titus.

*1 Timothy 6:14 (NKJV)* <sup>14</sup> that you keep this commandment without spot, blameless until our Lord Jesus Christ's appearing,

*2 Timothy 1:10 (NKJV)* <sup>10</sup> but has now been revealed by the appearing of our Savior Jesus Christ, who has abolished death and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel,

*2 Timothy 4:1 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> I charge you therefore before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, who will judge the living and the dead at His appearing and His kingdom:

*2 Timothy 4:8 (NKJV)* <sup>8</sup> Finally, there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, will give to me on that Day, and not to me only but also to all who have loved His appearing.

*Titus 2:13 (NKJV)* <sup>13</sup> looking for the blessed hope and glorious appearing of our great God and Savior Jesus Christ,

## Here are 4 Points to frame this “We Make it Our Own” – Waiting for His Soon Appearing

- We Make It Our Own – By Knowing there is Waiting for us a Reward
- We Make It Our Own – By Remembering It will be Perilous
- We Make It Our Own – By Rooting Each Other On
- We Make It Our Own – By Being Ready

### We Make It Our Own – By Knowing there is Waiting for us a Reward

He is going to put a crown upon your head and look into your eyes (for that is what He does – He sees us), and say.... Well down, welcome home:

*2 Timothy 4:8 (NKJV)* <sup>8</sup> Finally, there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, will give to me on that Day, and not to me only but also to all who have loved His appearing.

1 John 3:2 says we shall be like Him.

*1 John 3:2-3 (NKJV)* <sup>2</sup> Beloved, now we are children of God; and it has not yet been revealed what we shall be, but we know that when He is revealed, we shall be like Him, for we shall see Him as He is. <sup>3</sup> And everyone who has this hope in Him purifies himself, just as He is pure.

Romans 8:29, we are predestined to like Him. Predestined means pre-ordered, pre-ordered before it even comes out of production because everyone knows how great it will be because of the manufacturer and we are to be conformed, fashioned. The beauty is truth in the fashioning and the image, one in whom the likeness is seen and this fashioning into the image is Jeremiah 18 and Isaiah 64, the potter's touch.

*Romans 8:29 (NKJV)* <sup>29</sup> For whom He foreknew, He also predestined to be conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the firstborn among many brethren.

*Isaiah 64:8 (NKJV)* <sup>8</sup> But now, O LORD, You are our Father; We are the clay, and You our potter; And all we are the work of Your hand.

### We Make It Our Own – By Remembering It will be Perilous

Chapter three says perilous time and when you stand against these things written in chapter three, you'll find real quick how inclusive or better said excluded you shall be.

*2 Timothy 3:1-9 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> But know this, that in the last days perilous times will come: <sup>2</sup> For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, <sup>3</sup> unloving, unforgiving, slanderers, without self-control, brutal, despisers of good, <sup>4</sup> traitors, headstrong, haughty, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God, <sup>5</sup> having a form of godliness but denying its power. And from such people turn away! <sup>6</sup> For of this sort are those who creep into households and make captives of gullible women loaded down with sins, led away by various lusts, <sup>7</sup> always learning and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth. <sup>8</sup> Now as Jannes and Jambres resisted Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, disapproved concerning the faith; <sup>9</sup> but they will progress no further, for their folly will be manifest to all, as theirs also was.

Chapter four, lovers of self-need teachers who love themselves to give speeches that they all can feel good about. The teacher feels good because everybody loves him. The people feel good because the teacher didn't say anything to upset them. That's why they love the teacher.

*2 Timothy 4:1-5 (NKJV)* <sup>1</sup> I charge you therefore before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, who will judge the living and the dead at His appearing and His kingdom: <sup>2</sup> Preach the word! Be ready in season and out of season. Convince, rebuke, exhort, with all longsuffering and teaching. <sup>3</sup> For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but according to their own desires, because they have itching ears, they will heap up for themselves teachers; <sup>4</sup> and they will turn their ears away from the truth, and be turned aside to fables. <sup>5</sup> But you be watchful in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, fulfill your ministry.

### We Make It Our Own – By Rooting Each Other On

Romans 8:25, for if we hope for what we do not see, we eagerly wait for it with perseverance.

*Romans 8:25 (NKJV)* <sup>25</sup> But if we hope for what we do not see, we eagerly wait for it with perseverance.

Why it's worth to finish well, because there's laid up for us a crown at His appearing and all who love His appearing. All, we need to rest in this promise and root each other on and Hebrews 10:25 says as the day approaches, that's why we meet to encourage each other, to finish and to finish well, to finish strong because soon we're going to see His appearing.

*Hebrews 10:25 (NKJV)* <sup>25</sup> not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as is the manner of some, but exhorting one another, and so much the more as you see the Day approaching.

### We Make It Our Own – By Being Ready

You know, they always give, here's the top 10 reasons. Well, we got 14 as we look at them, and we had to merge them together just to squeeze 14, as the Good News is, all the prophecies point to Jesus Christ is Coming Back..... SOON!

1. Israel / Jerusalem / The Middle East
  - a. One is Israel is reborn (Isaiah 66:8)
2. The European Superstate / The AntiChrist / 7 Year Peace Pact
  - a. Two, the revived Roman empire we see in the European union before very eyes (Revelation 13:1-2, Daniel 7:24-25)
3. Earthquakes / Famines / Pestilence / Wars
  - a. Three, the earth in upheaval (Matthew 24)
4. One World Government / One World Religion / False Prophet
  - a. Four, a one world government with a one world religion (Revelation 13&17)
5. Iniquity / Sin Will Abound
  - a. Five, people will be lovers of self and therefore will reject Jesus ruling over them (2 Timothy 3:1-5)
6. Apostasy / The Great Deception
  - a. Six, great deception because they changed the narrative of the means of salvation through Christ, so they could live anyway they chose. (1 Timothy 4:1-2, Matthew 24:5. Matthew 24:24-25, 2 Peter 3:3-4)
7. Knowledge Shall Increase
  - a. Seven, knowledge shall increase, change the narrative so you can promote it with the technology and such things as the smartphone (Daniel 12:2-4)
8. The Magog Invasion
  - a. Eight, the Magog invasion. Israel's abandoned and here we see a new nuclear deal with Iran , and the Nations are abandoning Israel already by not standing strong against Iran who clearly says they want to destroy Israel. (Ezekiel 38)
9. The Rebuilt Temple in Jerusalem
  - a. Nine, the temple rebuilt. Well, Saudi Arabia is building one now and so too will Jerusalem and the bottom line is they're coming to say, all are one (Matthew 24: 15-16, Daniel 9:27)
10. Where's America?
  - a. Ten, there really is no mention of a superpower such as USA in prophecy. Today we see America becoming an isolationist and falling economically and we see the European union arising.
11. The Mark of the Beast
  - a. Eleven, the mark and here's a fascinating story about people getting chipped so they don't have to carry a COVID passport. But they carry their information in a little digital device about the size of a grain of rice and plant it under their skin (Revelation 13:16-18)
12. Babylon the World Headquarters / World Economic Center
  - a. Twelve, Babylon, the devil's going to finish what he started, that all men will come together and say, "We will make ourselves God. We don't need God and bow to Him, but just like the original Babel, God will bring it down. (Revelation 14:8. Revelation 18:10-11)
13. The Battle of Armageddon
  - a. Thirteen, 13, The battle of the King of the West (Revived Roman Empire – the European Union led by the Anti-Christ) against the Kings of the East. We see the rise of both. The rise of the kings of the east and we see that with the rise of China especially. Revelation 16:16. Revelation 19:17-21, Revelation 16:12)
14. The Good News
  - a. But 14, God can't wait to get His hands on you, on your shoulder to look into your eye and say, "Welcome home." (John 3:16, Ephesians 3:1-2, Ephesians 2:8-9, 1 Thessalonians 4:16-18)

**Isaiah 66:8 (NKJV)**<sup>8</sup> *Who has heard such a thing? Who has seen such things? Shall the earth be made to give birth in one day? Or shall a nation be born at once? For as soon as Zion was in labor, She gave birth to her children.*

**Revelation 13:1–2 (NKJV)**<sup>1</sup> *Then I stood on the sand of the sea. And I saw a beast rising up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and on his horns ten crowns, and on his heads a blasphemous name.*<sup>2</sup> *Now the beast which I saw was like a leopard, his feet were like the feet of a bear, and his mouth like the mouth of a lion. The dragon gave him his power, his throne, and great authority.*

**Matthew 24:3–8 (NKJV)**<sup>3</sup> *Now as He sat on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to Him privately, saying, "Tell us, when will these things be? And what will be the sign of Your coming, and of the end of the age?"*<sup>4</sup> *And Jesus answered and said to them: "Take heed that no one deceives you.*<sup>5</sup> *For many will come in My name, saying, 'I am the Christ,' and will deceive many.*<sup>6</sup> *And you will hear of wars and rumors of wars. See that you are not troubled; for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet.*<sup>7</sup> *For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. And there will be famines, pestilences, and earthquakes in various places.*<sup>8</sup> *All these are the beginning of sorrows.*

**2 Timothy 3:1–5 (NKJV)**<sup>1</sup> *But know this, that in the last days perilous times will come:*<sup>2</sup> *For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy,*<sup>3</sup> *unloving, unforgiving, slanderers, without self-control, brutal, despisers of good,*<sup>4</sup> *traitors, headstrong, haughty, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God,*<sup>5</sup> *having a form of godliness but denying its power. And from such people turn away!*

**Luke 19:14 (NKJV)**<sup>14</sup> *But his citizens hated him, and sent a delegation after him, saying, 'We will not have this man to reign over us.'*

**1 Timothy 4:1–2 (NKJV)**<sup>1</sup> *Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons,*<sup>2</sup> *speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron,*

**(Matthew 24:5 NKJV)** *"For many will come in My name, saying, 'I am the Christ,' and will deceive many.*

**Matthew 24:24–25 (NKJV)**<sup>24</sup> *For false christs and false prophets will rise and show great signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect.*<sup>25</sup> *See, I have told you beforehand.*

**2 Peter 3:3–4 (NKJV)**<sup>3</sup> *knowing this first: that scoffers will come in the last days, walking according to their own lusts,*<sup>4</sup> *and saying, "Where is the promise of His coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of creation."*

**Daniel 12:2–4 (NKJV)**<sup>2</sup> *And many of those who sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, Some to everlasting life, Some to shame and everlasting contempt.*<sup>3</sup> *Those who are wise shall shine Like the brightness of the firmament, And those who turn many to righteousness Like the stars forever and ever.*<sup>4</sup> *"But you, Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book until the time of the end; many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall increase."*

**Ezekiel 38 (NKJV)**<sup>1</sup> *Now the word of the Lord came to me, saying,*<sup>2</sup> *"Son of man, set your face against Gog, of the land of Magog, the prince of Rosh, Meshech, and Tubal, and prophesy against him,"*<sup>3</sup> *and say, 'Thus says the Lord God: "Behold, I am against you, O Gog, the prince of Rosh, Meshech, and Tubal.*<sup>4</sup> *I will turn you around, put hooks into your jaws, and lead you out, with all your army, horses, and horsemen, all splendidly clothed, a great company with bucklers and shields, all of them handling swords.*<sup>5</sup> *Persia, Ethiopia, and Libya are with them, all of them with shield and helmet;*<sup>6</sup> *Gomer and all its troops; the house of Togarmah from the far north and all its troops—many people are with you.*<sup>7</sup> *"Prepare yourself and be ready, you and all your companies that are gathered about you; and be a guard for them*

**Matthew 24:15–16 (NKJV)**<sup>15</sup> *"Therefore when you see the 'abomination of desolation,' spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place" (whoever reads, let him understand),*<sup>16</sup> *"then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains.*

**Daniel 9:27 (NKJV)**<sup>27</sup> *Then he shall confirm a covenant with many for one week; But in the middle of the week He shall bring an end to sacrifice and offering. And on the wing of abominations shall be one who makes desolate, Even until the consummation, which is determined, Is poured out on the desolate."*

**Revelation 13:16–18 (NKJV)**<sup>16</sup> *He causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on their right hand or on their foreheads,*<sup>17</sup> *and that no one may buy or sell except one who has the mark or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.*<sup>18</sup> *Here is wisdom. Let him who has understanding calculate the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man: His number is 666.*

**(Revelation 14:8 NKJV)** *And another angel followed, saying, "Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she has made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication."*

**Revelation 16:16 (NKJV)**<sup>16</sup> *And they gathered them together to the place called in Hebrew, Armageddon.*

**Revelation 19:17–21 (NKJV)**<sup>17</sup> *Then I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the birds that fly in the midst of heaven, "Come and gather together for the supper of the great God,"*<sup>18</sup> *that you may eat the flesh of kings, the flesh of captains, the flesh of mighty men, the flesh of horses and of those who sit on them, and the flesh of all people, free and slave, both small and great."*<sup>19</sup> *And I saw the beast, the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against Him who sat on the horse and against His army.*<sup>20</sup> *Then the beast was captured,*

and with him the false prophet who worked signs in his presence, by which he deceived those who received the mark of the beast and those who worshiped his image. These two were cast alive into the lake of fire burning with brimstone. <sup>21</sup> And the rest were killed with the sword which proceeded from the mouth of Him who sat on the horse. And all the birds were filled with their flesh.

**Revelation 16:12 (NKJV)** <sup>12</sup> Then the sixth angel poured out his bowl on the great river Euphrates, and its water was dried up, so that the way of the kings from the east might be prepared.

**John 3:16–17 (NKJV)** <sup>16</sup> For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life. <sup>17</sup> For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved.

**Ephesians 3:1–2 (NKJV)** <sup>1</sup> For this reason I, Paul, the prisoner of Christ Jesus for you Gentiles—<sup>2</sup> if indeed you have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God which was given to me for you,

**Ephesians 2:8–9 (NKJV)** <sup>8</sup> For by grace you have been saved through faith, and that not of yourselves; it is the gift of God, <sup>9</sup> not of works, lest anyone should boast.

**1 Thessalonians 4:16–18 (NKJV)** <sup>16</sup> For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of an archangel, and with the trumpet of God. And the dead in Christ will rise first. <sup>17</sup> Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up (Greek = harpazo / Latin = rapturo / English = rapture) together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And thus we shall always be with the Lord. <sup>18</sup> Therefore comfort one another with these words.

### **Glorified is our Destiny**

His soon appearing is soon as we see and thus in the twinkling of an eye, we shall all be changed, 1 Corinthians 15:52.

**1 Corinthians 15:52 (NKJV)** <sup>52</sup> in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, and the dead will be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.

Romans 8:30, glorified. That is the destiny. John 17:5, glory you gave me and now I give them. The definition of glory, it is what I shall be because who I have become the image of.

**Romans 8:30 (NKJV)** <sup>30</sup> Moreover whom He predestined, these He also called; whom He called, these He also justified; and whom He justified, these He also glorified.

**John 17:1–5 (NKJV)** <sup>1</sup> Jesus spoke these words, lifted up His eyes to heaven, and said: “Father, the hour has come. Glorify Your Son, that Your Son also may glorify You, <sup>2</sup> as You have given Him authority over all flesh, that He should give eternal life to as many as You have given Him. <sup>3</sup> And this is eternal life, that they may know You, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom You have sent. <sup>4</sup> I have glorified You on the earth. I have finished the work which You have given Me to do. <sup>5</sup> And now, O Father, glorify Me together with Yourself, with the glory which I had with You before the world was.

What a glorious ending to our study through Timothy, looking back, looking forward to 2022.

**2 Timothy 4:6–8 (NKJV)** <sup>6</sup> For I am already being poured out as a drink offering, and the time of my departure is at hand. <sup>7</sup> I have fought the good fight, I have finished the race, I have kept the faith. <sup>8</sup> Finally, there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, will give to me on that Day, and not to me only but also to all who have loved His appearing.